This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

3 3433 06176033 0

Digitized by Google

ogle

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Swal
S. D

D-10
8533

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

VOLUME III.

OF THE

AUTHOR'S WORKS.

CONTAINING

TRAVELS

3434 INTO SEVERAL

Remote Nations of the WORLD.

In Four PARTS, *viz.*

I. A Voyage to LILLIPUT.

II. A Voyage to BROBDINGNAG.

III. A Voyage to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB and JAPAN.

IV. A Voyage to the COUNTRY of the HOUYHNHNMS.

By *LEMUEL GULLIVER*, first a Surgeon, and then a Captain of several SHIPS.

——— ——— *Retroq;*
Vulgus abhorret ab his.

DUBLIN:
Printed by and for GEORGE FAULKNER, in *Essex-street*, opposite to the Bridge.

MDCCXLIII.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Advertiſement.

MR. SYMPSON's *Letter to Capt.* GULLIVER, *prefixed to this Volume, will make a long Advertiſement unneceſſary. Thoſe Interpolations complained of by the Captain, were made by a Perſon ſince deceaſed, on whoſe Judgment the Publiſher relyed to make any Alterations that might be thought neceſſary. But this Perſon, not rightly comprehending the Scheme of the Author, nor able to imitate his plain ſimple Style, thought fit, among many other Alterations and Inſertions, to compliment the Memory of her late Majeſty, by ſaying,* That ſhe governed without a Chief Miniſter. *We are aſſured, that the Copy ſent to the Bookſeller in* London, *was a Tranſcript of the Original, which Original being in the Poſſeſſion of a very worthy Gentleman in* London, *and a moſt intimate Friend of the Author's; after he had bought the Book in Sheets, and compared it with the Originals, bound it up with blank Leaves, and made thoſe Corrections, which the Reader will find in our Edition. For, the ſame Gentleman did us the Favour to let us tranſcribe his Corrections.*

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A

LETTER

FROM

Capt. *GULLIVER*,

TO HIS

Couſin *SYMPSON*.

I HOPE, you will be ready to own publickly, whenever you ſhall be called to it, that by your great and frequent Urgency, you prevailed on me to publiſh a very looſe and uncorrect Account of my Travels; with Direction to hire ſome young Gentlemen of either Univerſity to put them in Order, and correct the Style, as my C[illegible]n *Dampier* did by my Advice, in his Book called, *A Voyage round the World*. But, I do not remember, I gave you Power to

Digitized by Google

conſent, that any Thing ſhould be omitted, and much leſs that any Thing ſhould be inſerted: Therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every Thing of that Kind; particularly a Paragraph about her Majeſty the late Queen *Anne*, of moſt pious and glorious Memory; although I did reverence and eſteem her more than any of human Species. But you, or your Interpolator, ought to have conſidered, that as it was not my Inclination, ſo was it not decent to praiſe any Animal of our Compoſition before my Maſter *Houyhnhnm:* And beſides, the Fact was altogether falſe; for, to my Knowledge, being in *England* during ſome Part of her Majeſty's Reign, ſhe did govern by a Chief Miniſter; nay, even by two ſucceſſively; the firſt whereof was the Lord of *Godolphin*, and the ſecond the Lord of *Oxford*; ſo that you have made me *ſay the Thing which was not.* Likewiſe, in the Account of the Academy of Projectors, and ſeveral Paſſages of my Diſcourſe to my Maſter *Houyhnhnm*, you have either omitted ſome material Circumſtances, or minced or changed them in ſuch a Manner, that I do hardly know mine own Work. When I formerly hinted to you ſomething of this in a Letter, you were pleaſed to anſwer, that you were afraid of giving Offence; that People in Power were very watchful over the Preſs; and apt not only to interpret, but to puniſh every Thing which looked like an *Innuendo* (as I think you called it.) But pray, how could that which I ſpoke ſo many Years ago, and at above five thouſand Leagues diſtance, in another Reign, be applyed to any of the *Yahoos*, who now are ſaid to govern the Herd; eſpecially at a Time when I little thought on, or feared the Unhappineſs of living under them? Have not I the moſt Reaſon to complain, when I ſee theſe very

Digitized by Google

very *Yahoos* carried by *Houyhnhnms* in a Vehicle, as if theſe were Brutes, and thoſe the rational Creatures? And, indeed, to avoid ſo monſtrous and deteſtable a Sight, was one principal Motive of my Retirement hither.

THUS much I thought proper to tell you in Relation to your ſelf, and to the Truſt I repoſed in you.

I DO in the next Place complain of my own great Want of Judgment, in being prevailed upon by the Intreaties and falſe Reaſonings of you and ſome others, very much againſt mine own Opinion, to ſuffer my Travels to be publiſhed. Pray bring to your Mind how often I deſired you to conſider, when you inſiſted on the Motive of *Publick Good*; that the *Yahoos* were a Species of Animals utterly incapable of Amendment by Precepts or Examples: And ſo it hath proved; for inſtead of ſeeing a full Stop put to all Abuſes and Corruptions, at leaſt in this little Iſland, as I had Reaſon to expect: Behold, after above ſix Months Warning, I cannot learn that my Book hath produced one ſingle Effect according to mine Intentions: I deſired you would let me know by a Letter, when Party and Faction were extinguiſhed; Judges learned and upright; Pleaders honeſt and modeſt, with ſome Tincture of common Senſe; and *Smithfield* blazing with Pyramids of Law-Books; the young Nobility's Education entirely changed; the Phyſicians baniſhed; the Female *Yahoos* abounding in Virtue, Honour, Truth and good Senſe: Courts and Levees of great Miniſters thoroughly weeded and ſwept; Wit, Merit and Learning rewarded; all Diſgracers of the Preſs in Proſe and Verſe, condemned to eat nothing but their own Cotton, and quench their Thirſt with their own Ink. Theſe, and a thou-

Digitized by Google

ſand other Reformations, I firmly counted upon by your Encouragement; as indeed, they were plainly deducible from the Precepts delivered in my Book. And, it muſt be owned, that ſeven Months were a ſufficient Time to correct every Vice and Folly to which *Yahoos* are ſubject; if their Natures had been capable of the leaſt Diſpoſition to Virtue or Wiſdom: Yet ſo far have you been from anſwering mine Expectation in any of your Letters, that on the contrary, you are loading our Carrier every Week with Libels, and Keys, and Reflections, and Memoirs, and Second Parts; wherein I ſee myſelf accuſed of reflecting upon great States-Folk; of degrading human Nature, (for ſo they have ſtill the Confidence to ſtyle it) and of abuſing the Female Sex. I find likewiſe, that the Writers of thoſe Bundles are not agreed among themſelves; for ſome of them will not allow me to be Author of mine own Travels; and others make me Author of Books to which I am wholly a Stranger.

I FIND likewiſe, that your Printer hath been ſo careleſs as to confound the Times, and miſtake the Dates of my ſeveral Voyages and Returns; neither aſſigning the true Year, or the true Month, or Day of the Month: And, I hear the original Manuſcript is all deſtroyed, ſince the Publication of my Book. Neither have I any Copy left; however, I have ſent you ſome Corrections, which you may inſert, if ever there ſhould be a ſecond Edition: And yet I cannot ſtand to them, but ſhall leave that Matter to my judicious and candid Readers, to adjuſt it as they pleaſe.

I hear, ſome of our Sea-*Yahoos* find Fault with my Sea-Language, as not proper in many Parts, nor now in Uſe. I cannot help it. In my firſt Voyages, while I was young, I was inſtructed by the oldeſt Mariners,

Digitized by Google

Mariners, and learned to ſpeak as they did. But, I have ſince found, that the Sea-*Yahoos* are apt, like the Land ones, to become new fangled in their Words; which the latter change every Year; inſomuch, as I remember upon each Return to mine own Country, their old Dialect was ſo altered, that I could hardly underſtand the new. And I obſerve, when any *Yahoo* comes from *London*, out of Curioſity, to viſit me at mine own Houſe, we neither of us are able to deliver our Conceptions in a Manner intelligible to the other.

IF the Cenſure of *Yahoos* could any Way affect me, I ſhould have great Reaſon to complain, that ſome of them are ſo bold as to think my Book of Travels a meer Fiction out of mine own Brain; and have gone ſo far as to drop Hints, that the *Houyhnhnms*, and *Yahoos* have no more Exiſtence, than the Inhabitants of *Utopia*.

INDEED I muſt confeſs, that as to the People of *Lilliput*, *Brobdingrag* (for ſo the Word ſhould have been ſpelt, and not erroneouſly *Brobdingnag*) and *Laputa*; I have never yet heard of any *Yahoo* ſo preſumptuous as to diſpute their Being, or the Facts I have related concerning them; becauſe the Truth immediately ſtrikes every Reader with Conviction. And, is there leſs Probability in my Account of the *Houyhnhnms* or *Yahoos*, when it is manifeſt as to the latter, there are ſo many Thouſands, even in this City, who only differ from their Brother Brutes in *Houyhnhnmland*, becauſe they uſe a Sort of *Jabber*, and do not go naked. I wrote for their Amendment, and not their Approbation. The united Praiſe of the whole Race, would be of leſs Conſequence to me, than the neighing of thoſe two degenerate *Houyhnhnms* I keep in my Stable; becauſe, from theſe, degenerate as they are, I ſtill

Digitized by Google

improve in ſome Virtues, without any Mixture of Vice.

Do theſe miſerable Animals preſume to think, that I am ſo far degenerated, as to defend my Veracity: *Yahoo* as I am, it is well known through all *Houyhnhnmland*, that by the Inſtructions and Example of my illuſtrious Maſter, I was able in the Compaſs of two Years (although I confeſs with the utmoſt Difficulty) to remove that infernal Habit of Lying, Shuffling, Deceiving, and Equivocating, ſo deeply rooted in the very Souls of all my Species, eſpecially the *Europeans*.

I HAVE other Complaints to make upon this vexatious Occaſion; but I forbear troubling myſelf or you any further. I muſt freely confeſs, that ſince my laſt Return, ſome Corruptions of my *Yahoo* Nature have revived in me by converſing with a few of your Species, and particularly thoſe of mine own Family, by an unavoidable Neceſſity; elſe I ſhould never have attempted ſo abſurd a Project as that of reforming the *Yahoo* Race in this Kingdom; but, I have now done with all ſuch viſionary Schemes for ever.

April 2, 1727.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE

Publiſher *to the* Reader.

THE AUTHOR of theſe Travels, Mr. *Lemuel Gulliver*, is my antient and intimate Friend; there is likewiſe ſome Relation between us by the Mother's Side. About three Years ago, Mr. *Gulliver* growing weary of the Concourſe of curious People coming to him at his Houſe in *Redriff*, made a ſmall Purchaſe of Land, with a convenient Houſe, near *Newark*, in *Nottinghamſhire*, his Native County; where he now lives retired, yet in good Eſteem among his Neighbours.

ALTHOUGH Mr. *Gulliver* were born in *Nottinghamſhire*, where his Father dwelt, yet I have heard him ſay, his Family came from *Oxfordſhire*; to confirm which, I have obſerved in the Church-Yard at *Banbury*, in that County, ſeveral Tombs and Monuments of the *Gullivers*.

BEFORE he quitted *Redriff*, he left the Cuſtody of the following Papers in my Hands, with the Liberty to diſpoſe of them as I ſhould think fit. I have carefully peruſed them three Times: The Style is very plain and ſimple; and the only Fault I find is, that the Author, after the Manner of Travellers, is a little too circumſtantial. There is

Digitized by Google

an Air of Truth apparent through the Whole; and indeed the Author was ſo diſtinguiſhed for his Veracity, that it became a Sort of Proverb among his Neighbours at *Redriff*, when any one affirmed a Thing, to ſay, it was as true as if Mr. *Gulliver* had ſpoke it.

BY the Advice of ſeveral worthy Perſons, to whom, with the Author's Permiſſion, I communicated theſe Papers, I now venture to ſend them into the World; hoping they may be, at leaſt for ſome Time, a better Entertainment to our young Noblemen, than the common Scribbles of Politicks and Party.

THIS Volume would have been at leaſt twice as large, if I had not made bold to ſtrike out innumerable Paſſages relating to the Winds and Tides, as well as to the Variations and Bearings in the ſeveral Voyages; together with the minute Deſcriptions of the Management of the Ship in Storms, in the Style of Sailors: Likewiſe the Account of the Longitudes and Latitudes; wherein I have Reaſon to apprehend that Mr. *Gulliver* may be a little diſſatisfied: But, I was reſolved to fit the Work, as much as poſſible to the general Capacity of Readers. However, if my own Ignorance in Sea Affairs ſhall have led me to commit ſome Miſtakes, I alone am anſwerable for them: And, if any Traveller hath a Curioſity to ſee the whole Work at large, as it came from the Hand of the Author, I will be ready to gratify him.

As for any further Particulars relating to the Author, the Reader will receive Satisfaction from the firſt Pages of the Book.

Richard Sympſon.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE CONTENTS.

PART. I.

CHAP. I. *THE Author gives ſome Account of himſelf and Family. His firſt Inducements to Travel. He is Shipwrecked, and ſwims for his Life; gets ſafe on Shoar in the Country of* Lilliput; *is made a Priſoner, and carried up the Country.* Page 1

CHAP. II. *The Emperor of* LILLIPUT, *attended by ſeveral of the Nobility, come to ſee the Author in his Confinement. The Emperor's Perſon and Habit deſcribed. Learned Men appointed to teach the Author their Language. He gains Favour by his mild Diſpoſition. His Pockets are ſearched, and his Sword and Piſtols taken from him.*

CHAP. III. *The Author diverts the Emperor and his Nobility of both Sexes in a very uncommon Manner. The Diverſions of the Court of* LILLIPUT *deſcribed. The Author hath his Liberty granted him upon certain Conditions.* 28

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV. Mildendo, *the Metropolis of* LILLIPUT *described, together with the Emperor's Palace, a Converſation between the Author and a principal Secretary, concerning the Affairs of that Empire: The Author's Offers to ſerve the Emperor in his Wars.* Page 38

CHAP. V. *The Author by an extraordinary Stratagem prevents an Invaſion. A high Title of Honour is conferr'd upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the Emperor of* BLEFUSCU, *and ſue for Peace. The Empreſs's Apartment on fire by an Accident; the Author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the Palace.* 45

CHAP. VI. *Of the Inhabitants of* LILLIPUT; *their Learning, Laws, and Cuſtoms. The Manner of Educating their Children. The Author's Way of living in that Country. His Vindication of a great Lady.* 45

CHAP. VII. *The Author being informed of a Deſign to accuſe him of High Treaſon, maketh his Eſcape to* BLEFUSCU. *His Reception there.* 67

CHAP. VIII. *The Author, by a lucky Accident, finds Means to leave* BLEFUSCU; *and, after ſome Difficulties, returns ſafe to his Native Country.* 78

PART

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

PART II.

CHAP. I. *A Great Storm described. The long Boat sent to fetch Water, the Author goes with it to discover the Country. He is left on Shore, is seized by one of the Natives, and carried to a Farmer's House. His Reception there, with several Accidents that happened to him. A Description of the Inhabitants.* Page 86

CHAP. II. *A Description of the Farmer's Daughter. The Author carried to a Market-Town, and then to the Metropolis. The Particulars of his Journey.* 102

CHAP. III. *The Author sent for to Court. The Queen buys him of his Master the Farmer, and presents him to the King. He disputes with his Majesty's great Scholars. An Apartment at Court provided for the Author. He is in high Favour with the Queen. He stands up for the Honour of his own Country. His Quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf.* 110

CHAP. IV. *The Country described. A Proposal for correcting modern Maps. The King's Palace, and some Account of the Metropolis. The Author's Way of Travelling. The chief Temple described.* 123

CHAP. V. *Several Adventures that happened to the Author. The Execution of a Criminal. The Author shews his Skill in Navigation.* 130

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI. *Several Contrivances of the Author to please the King and Queen. He shews his Skill in Musick. The King enquires into the State of* EUROPE, *which the Author relates to him. The King's Observations thereon.* Page 143

CHAP. VII. *The Author's Love of his Country. He makes a Proposal of much Advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great Ignorance in Politicks. The Learning of that Country very imperfect and confined. Their Laws, and Military Affairs, and Parties in the State.* 155

CHAP. VIII. *The King and Queen make a Progress to the Frontiers. The Author attends them. The Manner in which he leaves the Country very particularly related. He returns to* ENGLAND. 164

PART. III.

CHAP. I. *THE Author sets out on his third Voyage. Is taken by Pyrates. The Malice of a* Dutchman. *His Arrival at an Island. He is received into* LAPUTA. 179

CHAP. II. *The Humours and Dispositions of the* LAPUTANS *described. An Account of their Learning. Of the King, and his Court. The Author's Reception there. The Inhabitants subject to Fears and Disquietudes. An Account of the Women.* 187

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III. *A Phænomenon solved by modern Philosophy and Astronomy. The* LAPUTANS *great Improvements in the latter. The King's Method of suppressing Insurrections.* Page 198

CHAP. IV. *The Author leaves* LAPUTA, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the Metropolis. A Description of the Metropolis and the Country adjoyning. The Author hospitably received by a great Lord. His Conversation with that Lord.* 205

CHAP. V. *The Author permitted to see the grand Academy of* LAGADO. *The Academy largely described. The Arts wherein the Professors employed themselves.* 223

CHAP. VI. *A further Account of the Academy. The Author proposeth some Improvements, which are honourably received.* 223

CHAP. VII. *The Author leaves* LAGADO, *arrives at* MALDONADA. *No Ship ready. He takes a short Voyage to* GLUBBDUBDRIB. *His Reception by the Governor.* 231

CHAP. VIII. *A further Account of* GLUBBDUBDRIB. *Antient and Modern History corrected.* 237

CHAP. IX. *The Author's return to* MALDONADA. *Sails to the Kingdom of* LUGGNAGG. *The Author confined. He is sent for to Court. The Manner of his Admittance. The King's great Lenity to his Subjects.* 245

CHAP. X. *The* LUGGNUGGIANS *commended. A particular Description of the* STRULDBRUGS, *with many Conversations between the Author and some eminent Persons upon that Subject.* 205

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XI. *The Author leaves* LUGGNAG, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *Ship to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* ENGLAND. Page 261

PART. IV.

CHAP. I. *THE Author ſets out as Captain of a Ship. His Men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long Time to his Cabbin, ſet him on Shore in an unknown Land. He travels up in the Country. The* Yahoos, *a ſtrange Sort of Animal deſcribed. The Author meets two* Houyhnhnms. 266

CHAP. II. *The Author conducted by a* Houyhnhnm *to his Houſe. The Houſe deſcribed. The Author's Reception. The Food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The Author in Diſtreſs for want of Meat, is at laſt relieved. His Manner of feeding in that Country.* 275

CHAP. III. *The Author ſtudies to learn the Language, the* Houyhnhnm *his Maſter aſſiſts in teaching him. The Language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of Quality come out of Curioſity to ſee the Author. He gives his Maſter a ſhort Account of his Voyage.* 283

CHAP. IV. *The* Houyhnhnms *Notion of Truth and Falſhood. The Author's Diſcourſe diſapproved by his Maſter. The Author gives a more particular Account of himſelf, and the Accidents of his Voyage.* 291

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V. *The Author, at his Master's Commands, informs him of the State of* ENGLAND. *The Causes of War among the Princes of* EUROPE. *The Author begins to explain the* English *Constitution.* Page 298

CHAP. VI. *A Continuation of the State of* ENGLAND, *under Queen* ANNE. *The Character of a first Minister in the Courts of* EUROPE. 307

CHAP. VII. *The Author's great Love of his Native Country. His Master's Observations upon the Constitutions and Administration of* ENGLAND, *as described by the Author, with parallel Cases and Comparisons. His Master's Observations upon human Nature.* 316

CHAP. VIII. *The Author relateth several Particulars of the* Yahoos. *The great Virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The Education and Exercises of their Youth. Their general Assembly.* 326

CHAP. IX. *A grand Debate at the general Assembly of the* Houyhnhnms; *and how it was determined. The Learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their Buildings. Their Manner of Burials. The Defectiveness of their Language.* 334

CHAP. X. *The Author's Œconomy and happy Life among the* Houyhnhnms. *His great Improvement in Virtue, by conversing with them. Their Conversations. The Author hath Notice given him by his Master, that he must depart from the Country. He falls into a Swoon for Grief, but submits. He contrives and finishes a Canoo, by the Help of a Fellow-Servant; and puts to Sea at a Venture.* 341

CHAP.

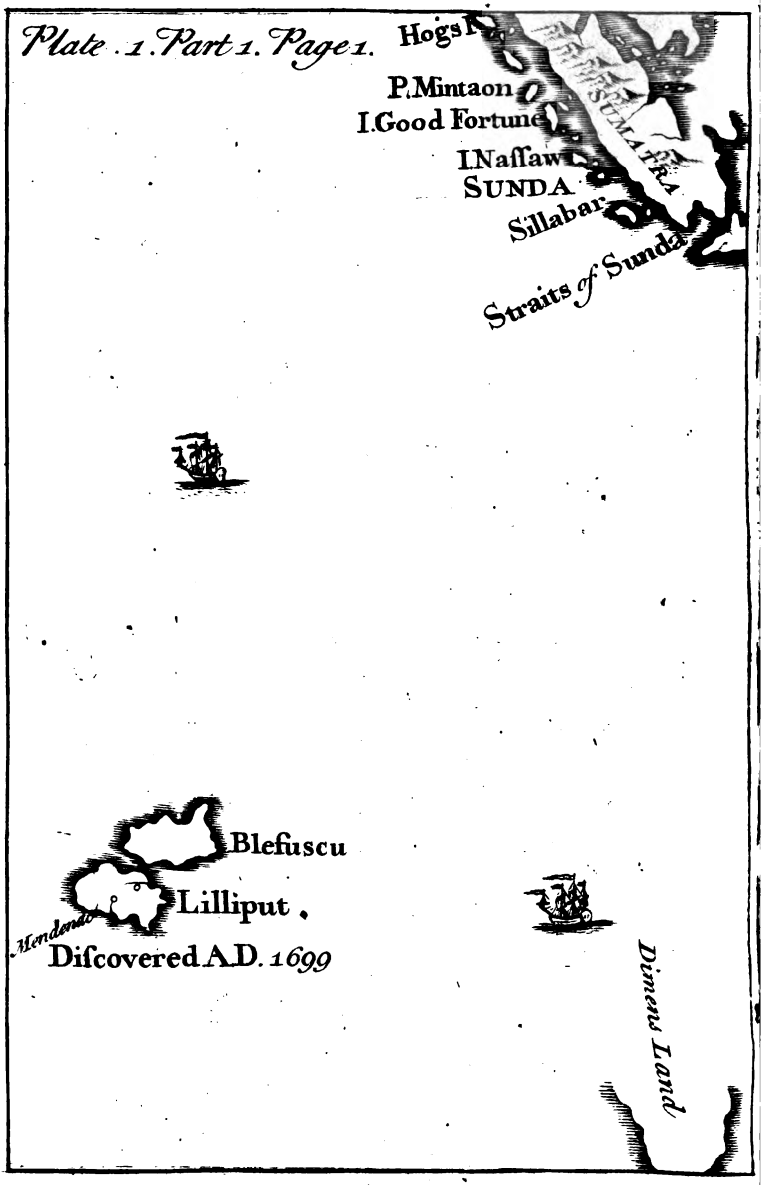
Digitized by Google

CHAP. XI. *The Author's dangerous Voyage. He arrives at* New-Holland, *hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an Arrow by one of the Natives. Is ſeized and carried by Force into a* Portugueze *Ship. The great Civilities of the Captain. The Author arrives at* ENGLAND.
Page 351

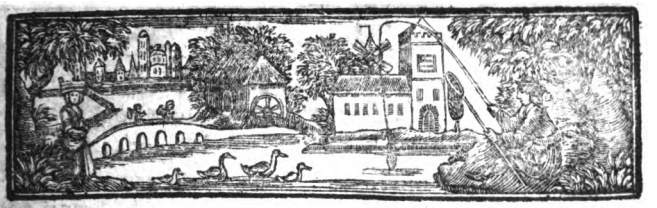
CHAP. XII. *The Author's Veracity. His Deſign in publiſhing this Work. His Cenſure of Thoſe Travellers who ſwerve from the Truth. The Author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter Ends in Writing. An Objection anſwered. The Method of planting Colonies. His Native Country commended. The Right of the Crown to thoſe Countries deſcribed by the Author, is juſtified. The Difficulty of conquering them. The Author taketh his laſt Leave of the Reader; propoſeth his Manner of Living for the future; gives good Advice, and concludeth.* 361

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google



TRAVELS.

PART I.

A VOYAGE *to* LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I.

The Author giveth ſome Account of himſelf and Family; His firſt Inducements to travel. He is Shipwrecked, and ſwims for his Life; gets ſafe on Shoar in the Country of Lilliput; *is made a Priſoner, and carried up the Country.*

MY Father had a ſmall Eſtate in *Nottinghamſhire*; I was the Third of five Sons. He ſent me to *Emanuel-College* in *Cambridge*, at fourteen Years old, where I reſided three Years, and applied my ſelf cloſe to my Studies: But the Charge of maintaining me (although I had a very

Digitized by Google

ſcanty Allowance) being too great for a narrow Fortune; I was bound Apprentice to Mr. *James Bates*, an eminent Surgeon in *London*, with whom I continued four Years; and my Father now and then ſending me ſmall Sums of Money, I laid them out in learning Navigation, and other Parts of the Mathematicks, uſeful to thoſe who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be ſome Time or other my Fortune to do. When I left Mr. *Bates*, I went down to my Father, where, by the Aſſiſtance of him and my Uncle *John*, and ſome other Relations, I got forty Pounds, and a Promiſe of thirty Pounds a Year to maintain me at *Leyden*: There I ſtudied Phyſick two Years and ſeven Months, knowing it would be uſeful in long Voyages.

SOON after my Return from *Leyden*, I was recommended by my good Maſter Mr. *Bates*, to be Surgeon to the *Swallow*, Captain *Abraham Pannell* Commander; with whom I continued three Years and a half, making a Voyage or two into the *Levant*, and ſome other Parts. When I came back, I reſolved to ſettle in *London*, to which Mr. *Bates*, my Maſter, encouraged me; and by him I was recommended to ſeveral Patients. I took Part of a ſmall Houſe in the *Old-Jury*; and being adviſed to alter my Condition, I married Mrs. *Mary Burton*, ſecond Daughter to Mr. *Edmond Burton*, Hoſier, in *Newgate-ſtreet*, with whom I received four hundred Pounds for a Portion.

BUT, my good Maſter *Bates* dying in two Years after, and I having few Friends, my Buſineſs began to fail; for my Conſcience would not ſuffer me to imitate the bad Practice of too many among my Brethren. Having therefore conſulted with my Wife, and ſome of my Acquaintance, I determined to

Digitized by Google

to go again to Sea. I was Surgeon ſucceſſively in two Ships, and made ſeveral Voyages, for ſix Years, to the *Eaſt* and *Weſt Indies*; by which I got ſome Addition to my Fortune. My Hours of Leiſure I ſpent in reading the beſt Authors, ancient and modern; being always provided with a good Number of Books; and when I was aſhore, in obſerving the Manners and Diſpoſitions of the People, as well as learning their Language; wherein I had a great Facility by the Strength of my Memory.

THE laſt of theſe Voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the Sea, and intended to ſtay at home with my Wife and Family. I removed from the *Old-Jury* to *Fetter-lane*, and from thence to *Wapping*, hoping to get Buſineſs amongſt the Sailors; but it would not turn to Account. After three Years Expectation, that Things would mend, I accepted an advantageous Offer from Captain *William Prichard*, Maſter of the *Antelope*, who was making a Voyage to the *South-Sea*. We ſet ſail from *Briſtol*, *May* 4th, 1699, and our Voyage at firſt was very proſperous.

IT would not be proper for ſome Reaſons, to trouble the Reader with the Particulars of our Adventures in thoſe Seas: Let it ſuffice to inform him, that in our Paſſage from thence to the *Eaſt Indies*, we were driven by a violent Storm to the North-weſt of *Van Diemen*'s Land. By an Obſervation, we found ourſelves in the Latitude of 30 Degrees 2 Minutes South. Twelve of our Crew were dead by immoderate Labour, and ill Food; the reſt were in a very weak Condition. On the fifth of *November*, which was the Beginning of Summer in thoſe Parts, the Weather being very hazy, the Seamen ſpyed a Rock, within half a Cable's length

Digitized by Google

of the Ship; but the Wind was ſo ſtrong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately ſplit. Six of the Crew, of whom I was one, having let down the Boat into the Sea, made a Shift to get clear of the Ship, and the Rock. We rowed by my Computation, about three Leagues, until we were able to work no longer, being already ſpent with Labour while we were in the Ship: We therefore truſted ourſelves to the Mercy of the Waves; and in about half an Hour the Boat was overſet by a ſudden Flurry from the North. What became of my Companions in the Boat, as well as of thoſe who eſcaped on the Rock, or were left in the Veſſel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all loſt. For my own Part, I ſwam as Fortune directed me, and was puſhed forward by Wind and Tide. I often let my Legs drop, and could feel no Bottom: But when I was almoſt gone, and able to ſtruggle no longer, I found myſelf within my Depth; and by this Time the Storm was much abated. The Declivity was ſo ſmall, that I walked near a Mile before I got to the Shore, which I conjectured was about eight o'Clock in the Evening. I then advanced forward near half a Mile, but could not diſcover any Sign of Houſes or Inhabitants; at leaſt I was in ſo weak a Condition, that I did not obſerve them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the Heat of the Weather, and about half a Pint of Brandy that I drank as I left the Ship, I found myſelf much inclined to ſleep. I lay down on the Graſs, which was very ſhort and ſoft; where I ſlept ſounder than ever I remember to have done in my Life, and as I reckoned, above nine Hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt Day-light. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir: For, as I happened to lie on my Back, I found my Arms and Legs

Digitized by Google

Legs were ſtrongly faſtned on each Side to the Ground; and my Hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the ſame Manner. I likewiſe felt ſeveral ſlender Ligatures acroſs my Body, from my Arm-pits to my Thighs. I could only look upwards; the Sun began to grow hot, and the Light offended mine Eyes. I heard a confuſed Noiſe about me, but in the Poſture I lay, could ſee nothing except the Sky. In a little Time I felt ſomething alive moving on my left Leg, which advancing gently forward over my Breaſt, came almoſt up to my Chin; when bending mine Eyes downwards as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human Creature not ſix Inches high, with a Bow and Arrow in his Hands, and a Quiver at his Back. In the mean Time, I felt at leaſt forty more of the ſame Kind (as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the utmoſt Aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all run back in a Fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the Falls they got by leaping from my Sides upon the Ground. However, they ſoon returned; and one of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full Sight of my Face, lifting up his Hands and Eyes by way of Admiration, cryed out in a ſhrill, but diſtinct Voice, *Hekina Degul:* The others repeated the ſame Words ſeveral Times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the Reader may believe, in great Uneaſineſs: At length, ſtruggling to get looſe, I had the Fortune to break the Strings, and wrench out the Pegs that faſtned my left Arm to the Ground: For, by lifting it up to my Face, I diſcovered the Methods they had taken to bind me; and, at the ſame Time, with a violent Pull, which gave me exceſſive Pain, I a little looſened the Strings that tied down

down my Hair on the left Side; ſo that I was juſt able to turn my Head about two Inches. But the Creatures ran off a ſecond Time, before I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a great Shout in a very ſhrill Accent; and after it ceaſed, I heard one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo Phonac*; when in an Inſtant, I felt above an hundred Arrows diſcharged on my left Hand, which pricked me like ſo many Needles; and beſides, they ſhot another Flight into the Air, as we do Bombs in *Europe*; whereof many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my Body, (though I felt them not) and ſome on my Face, which I immediately covered with my left Hand. When this Shower of Arrows was over, I fell a groaning with Grief and Pain; and then ſtriving again to get looſe, they diſcharged another Volley larger than the firſt; and ſome of them attempted with Spears to ſtick me in the Sides; but, by good Luck, I had on me a Buff Jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the moſt prudent Method to lie ſtill; and my Deſign was to continue ſo until Night, when my left Hand being already looſe, I could eaſily free my ſelf: And, as for the Inhabitants, I had Reaſon to believe I might be a Match for the greateſt Armies they could bring againſt me, if they were all of the ſame Size with him that I ſaw. But Fortune diſpoſed otherwiſe of me. When the People obſerved I was quiet, they diſcharged no more Arrows: But by the Noiſe encreaſing, I knew their Numbers were greater; and about four Yards from me over-againſt my right Ear, I heard a Knocking for above an Hour, like People at work; when turning my Head that Way, as well as the Pegs and Strings would permit me, I ſaw a Stage erected about a Foot and a half from the Ground, capable

Digitized by Google

pable of holding four of the Inhabitants, with two or three Ladders to mount it: From whence one of them, who ſeemed to be a Perſon of Quality, made me a long Speech, whereof I underſtood not one Syllable. But I ſhould have mentioned, that before the principal Perſon began his Oration, he cryed out three Times *Langro Dehul ſan*: (theſe Words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me.) Whereupon immediately about fifty of the Inhabitants came, and cut the Strings that faſtned the left Side of my Head, which gave me the Liberty of turning it to the right, and of obſerving the Perſon and Geſture of him who was to ſpeak. He appeared to be of a middle Age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him; whereof one was a Page, who held up his Train, and ſeemed to be ſomewhat longer than my middle Finger; the other two ſtood one on each Side to ſupport him. He acted every Part of an Orator; and I could obſerve many Periods of Threatnings, and others of Promiſes, Pity, and Kindneſs. I anſwered in a few Words, but in the moſt ſubmiſſive Manner, lifting up my left Hand and both mine Eyes to the Sun, as calling him for a Witneſs; and being almoſt famiſhed with Hunger, having not eaten a Morſel for ſome Hours before I left the Ship. I found the Demands of Nature ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my Impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict Rules of Decency) by putting my Finger frequently on my Mouth, to ſignify that I wanted Food. The *Hurgo* (for ſo they call a great Lord, as I afterwards learnt) underſtood me very well: He deſcended from the Stage, and commanded that ſeveral Ladders ſhould be applied to my Sides, on which above an hundred of the Inhabitants

Digitized by Google

Inhabitants mounted and walked towards my Mouth, laden with Baskets full of Meat, which had been provided, and ſent thither by the King's Orders upon the firſt Intelligence he received of me. I obſerved there was the Fleſh of ſeveral Animals, but could not diſtinguiſh them by the Taſte. There were Shoulders, Legs, and Loins ſhaped like thoſe of Mutton, and very well dreſſed, but ſmaller than the Wings of a Lark. I eat them by two or three at a Mouthful; and took three Loaves at a Time, about the Bigneſs of Musket-Bullets. They ſupplyed me as faſt as they could, ſhewing a thouſand Marks of Wonder and Aſtoniſhment at my Bulk and Appetite. I then made another Sign that I wanted Drink. They found by my eating that a ſmall Quantity would not ſuffice me; and being a moſt ingenious People, they ſlung up with great Dexterity one of their largeſt Hogsheads; then rolled it towards my Hand, and beat out the Top; I drank it off at a Draught, which I might well do, for it hardly held half a Pint, and taſted like a ſmall Wine of *Burgundy*, but much more delicious. They brought me a ſecond Hogſhead, which I drank in the ſame Manner, and made Signs for more, but they had none to give me. When I had performed theſe Wonders, they ſhouted for Joy, and danced upon my Breaſt, repeating ſeveral Times as they did at firſt, *Hekinah Degul.* They made me a Sign, that I ſhould throw down the two Hogſheads, but firſt warned the People below to ſtand out of the Way, crying aloud, *Borach Mivola*; and when they ſaw the Veſſels in the Air, there was an univerſal Shout of *Hekinah Degul.* I confeſs I was often tempted, while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my Body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the

Digitized by Google

the firſt that came in my Reach, and daſh them againſt the Ground. But the Remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do; and the Promiſe of Honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive Behaviour, ſoon drove out thoſe Imaginations. Beſides, I now conſidered my ſelf as bound by the Laws of Hoſpitality to a People who had treated me with ſo much Expence and Magnificence. However, in my Thoughts I could not ſufficiently wonder at the Intrepidity of theſe diminutive Mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk on my Body, while one of my Hands was at Liberty, without trembling at the very Sight of ſo prodigious a Creature as I muſt appear to them. After ſome Time, when they obſerved, that I made no more Demands for Meat, there appeared before me a Perſon of high Rank from his Imperial Majeſty. His Excellency having mounted on the Small of my right Leg, advanced forwards up to my Face, with about a Dozen of his Retinue; and producing his Credentials under the Signet Royal, which he applied cloſe to mine Eyes, ſpoke about ten Minutes, without any Signs of Anger, but with a Kind of determinate Reſolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found was towards the Capital City, about half a Mile diſtant, whither it was agreed by his Majeſty in Council that I muſt be conveyed. I anſwered in few Words, but to no Purpoſe, and made a Sign with my Hand that was looſe, putting it to the other, (but over his Excellency's Head, for fear of hurting him or his Train) and then to my own Head and Body, to ſignify that I deſired my Liberty. It appeared that he underſtood me well enough; for he ſhook his Head by way of Diſapprobation,

Digitized by Google

probation, and held his Hand in a Poſture to ſhew that I muſt be carried as a Priſoner. However, he made other Signs to let me underſtand, that I ſhould have Meat and Drink enough, and very good Treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my Bonds; but again, when I felt the Smart of their Arrows upon my Face and Hands, which were all in Bliſters, and many of the Darts ſtill ſticking in them; and obſerving likewiſe, that the Number of my Enemies encreaſed; I gave Tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleaſed. Upon this, the *Hurgo* and his Train withdrew, with much Civility and cheerful Countenances. Soon after I heard a general Shout, with frequent Repetitions of the Words, *Peplom Selan*, and I felt great Numbers of the People on my left Side relaxing the Cords to ſuch a Degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to eaſe my ſelf with making Water; which I very plentifully did, to the great Aſtoniſhment of the People, who conjecturing by my Motions what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that Side, to avoid the Torrent which fell with ſuch Noiſe and Violence from me. But before this, they had dawbed my Face and both my Hands with a Sort of Ointment very pleaſant to the Smell, which in a few Minutes removed all the Smart of their Arrows. Theſe Circumſtances, added to the Refreſhment I had received by their Victuals and Drink, which were very nouriſhing, diſpoſed me to ſleep. I ſlept about eight Hours as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was no Wonder; for the Phyſicians, by the Emperor's Order, had mingled a ſleeping Potion in the Hogſheads of Wine.

IT

IT ſeems, that upon the firſt Moment I was diſcovered ſleeping on the Ground after my Landing, the Emperor had early Notice of it by an Expreſs; and determined in Council, that I ſhould be tyed in the Manner I have related (which was done in the Night while I ſlept) that Plenty of Meat and Drink ſhould be ſent me, and a Machine prepared to carry me to the Capital City.

THIS Reſolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any Prince in *Europe* on the like Occaſion; however, in my Opinion, it was extremely Prudent as well as Generous. For, ſuppoſing theſe People had endeavoured to kill me with their Spears and Arrows while I was aſleep; I ſhould certainly have awaked with the firſt Senſe of Smart, which might ſo far have rouzed my Rage and Strength, as to enable me to break the Strings wherewith I was tyed; after which, as they were not able to make Reſiſtance, ſo they could expect no Mercy.

THESE People are moſt excellent Mathematicians, and arrived to a great Perfection in Mechanicks, by the Countenance and Encouragement of the Emperor, who is a renowned Patron of Learning. This Prince hath ſeveral Machines fixed on Wheels, for the Carriage of Trees and other great Weights. He often buildeth his largeſt Men of War, whereof ſome are nine Foot long, in the Woods where the Timber grows, and has them carried on theſe Engines three or four hundred Yards to the Sea. Five hundred Carpenters and Engineers were immediately ſet at work to prepare the greateſt Engine they had. It was a Frame of Wood raiſed three Inches from the Ground, about ſeven Foot long and four wide, moving upon twenty

Digitized by Google

twenty two Wheels. The Shout I heard, was upon the Arrival of this Engine, which, it ſeems, ſet out in four Hours after my Landing. It was brought parallel to me as I lay. But the principal Difficulty was to raiſe and place me in this Vehicle. Eighty Poles, each of one Foot high, were erected for this Purpoſe, and very ſtrong Cords of the Bigneſs of Packthread were faſtened by Hooks to many Bandages, which the Workmen had girt round my Neck, my Hands, my Body, and my Legs. Nine hundred of the ſtrongeſt Men were employed to draw up theſe Cords by many Pullies faſtned on the Poles; and thus in leſs than three Hours, I was raiſed and ſlung into the Engine, and there tyed faſt. All this I was told; for while the whole Operation was performing, I lay in a profound Sleep, by the Force of that ſoporiferous Medicine infuſed into my Liquor. Fifteen hundred of the Emperor's largeſt Horſes, each about four Inches and a half high, were employed to draw me towards the Metropolis, which, as I ſaid, was half a Mile diſtant.

ABOUT four Hours after we began our Journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous Accident; for the Carriage being ſtopt a while to adjuſt ſomething that was out of Order, two or three of the young Natives had the Curioſity to ſee how I looked when I was aſleep; they climbed up into the Engine, and advancing very ſoftly to my Face, one of them, an Officer in the Guards, put the ſharp End of his Half-Pike a good Way up into my left Noſtril, which tickled my Noſe like a Straw, and made me ſneeze violently: Whereupon they ſtole off unperceived; and it was three Weeks before I knew the Cauſe of my awaking ſo ſuddenly. We made a long March the remaining Part of the Day,

Digitized by Google

Day, and reſted at Night with five hundred Guards on each Side of me, half with Torches, and half with Bows and Arrows ready to ſhoot me if I ſhould offer to ſtir. The next Morning at Sunriſe we continued our March, and arrived within two hundred Yards of the City-Gates about Noon. The Emperor, and all his Court, came out to meet us; but his great Officers would by no Means ſuffer his Majeſty to endanger his Perſon by mounting on my Body.

AT the Place where the Carriage ſtopt, there ſtood an ancient Temple, eſteemed to be the largeſt in the whole Kingdom; which having been polluted ſome Years before by an unnatural Murder, was, according to the Zeal of thoſe People, looked upon as Prophane, and therefore had been applied to common Uſe, and all the Ornaments and Furniture carried away. In this Edifice it was determined I ſhould lodge. The great Gate fronting to the North was about four Feet high, and almoſt two Feet wide, through which I could eaſily creep. On each Side of the Gate was a ſmall Window not above ſix Inches from the Ground: Into that on the left Side, the King's Smiths conveyed fourſcore and eleven Chains, like thoſe that hang to a Lady's Watch in *Europe*, and almoſt as large, which were locked to my Left Leg with ſix and thirty Padlocks. Over againſt this Temple, on the other Side of the great Highway, at twenty Feet Diſtance, there was a Turret at leaſt five Feet high. Here the Emperor aſcended with many principal Lords of his Court, to have an Opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not ſee them. It was reckoned that above an hundred thouſand Inhabitants came out of the Town upon the ſame Errand; and in ſpight of my Guards, I believe

Digitized by Google

believe there could not be fewer than ten thouſand, at ſeveral Times, who mounted upon my Body by the Help of Ladders. But a Proclamation was ſoon iſſued to forbid it, upon pain of Death. When the Workmen found it was impoſſible for me to break looſe, they cut all the Strings that bound me; whereupon I roſe up with as melancholy a Diſpoſition as ever I had in my Life. But the Noiſe and Aſtoniſhment of the People at ſeeing me riſe and walk, are not to be expreſſed. The Chains that held my left Leg were about two Yards long, and gave me not only the Liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a Semi-circle; but being fixed within four Inches of the Gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full Length in the Temple.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

The Emperor of LILLIPUT, *attended by ſeveral of the Nobility, comes to ſee the Author in his Confinement. The Emperor's Perſon and Habit deſcribed. Learned Men appointed to teach the Author their Language. He gains Favour by his mild Diſpoſition. His Pockets are ſearched, and his Sword and Piſtols taken from him.*

WHEN I found my ſelf on my Feet, I looked about me, and muſt confeſs I never beheld a more entertaining Proſpect. The Country round appeared like a continued Garden; and the incloſed Fields, which were generally forty Feet Square, reſembled ſo many Beds of Flowers. Theſe Fields were intermingled with Woods of half a Stang, and the talleſt Trees, as I could judge, appeared to be ſeven Feet high. I viewed the Town on my left Hand, which looked like the painted Scene of a City in a Theatre.

I HAD been for ſome Hours extremely preſſed by the Neceſſities of Nature; which was no Wonder, it being almoſt two Days ſince I had laſt diſburthened my ſelf. I was under great Difficulties between Urgency and Shame. The beſt Expedient

Digitized by Google

ent I could think on, was to creep into my Houſe, which I accordingly did; and ſhutting the Gate after me, I went as far as the Length of my Chain would ſuffer; and diſcharged my Body of that uneaſy Load. But this was the only Time I was ever guilty of ſo uncleanly an Action; for which I cannot but hope the candid Reader will give ſome Allowance, after he hath maturely and impartially conſidered my Caſe, and the Diſtreſs I was in. From this Time my conſtant Practice was, as ſoon as I roſe, to perform that Buſineſs in open Air, at the full Extent of my Chain; and due Care was taken every Morning before Company came, that the offenſive Matter ſhould be carried off in Wheelbarrows, by two Servants appointed for that Purpoſe. I would not have dwelt ſo long upon a Circumſtance, that perhaps at firſt Sight may appear not very momentous; If I had not thought it neceſſary to juſtify my Character in Point of Cleanlineſs to the World; which I am told, ſome of my Maligners have been pleaſed, upon this and other Occaſions, to call in Queſtion.

WHEN this Adventure was at an End, I came back out of my Houſe, having Occaſion for freſh Air. The Emperor was already deſcended from the Tower, and, advancing on Horſeback towards me, which had like to have coſt him dear; for the Beaſt, although very well trained, yet wholly unuſed to ſuch a Sight, which appeared, as if a Mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder Feet: But that Prince, who is an excellent Horſeman, kept his Seat, until his Attendants ran in, and held the Bridle, while his Majeſty had Time to diſmount. When he alighted, he ſurveyed me round with great Admiration, but kept beyond the Length of my Chains. He ordered his Cooks and Butlers, who were

Digitized by Google

were already prepared, to give me Victuals and Drink, which they puſhed forward in a Sort of Vehicles upon Wheels until I could reach them. I took theſe Vehicles, and ſoon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with Meat, and ten with Liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good Mouthfuls, and I emptied the Liquor of ten Veſſels, which was contained in earthen Vials, into one Vehicle, drinking it off at a Draught; and ſo I did with the reſt. The Empreſs, and young Princes of the Blood, of both Sexes, attended by many Ladies, ſate at ſome Diſtance in their Chairs; but upon the Accident that happened to the Emperor's Horſe, they alighted, and came near his Perſon; which I am now going to deſcribe. He is taller by almoſt the Breadth of my Nail, than any of his Court; which alone is enough to ſtrike an Awe into the Beholders. His Features are ſtrong and maſculine, with an *Auſtrian* Lip, and arched Noſe, his Complexion olive, his Countenance erect, his Body and Limbs well proportioned, all his Motions graceful, and his Deportment majeſtick. He was then paſt his Prime, being twenty-eight Years and three Quarters old, of which he had reigned about ſeven, in great Felicity, and generally victorious. For the better Convenience of beholding him, I lay on my Side, ſo that my Face was parallel to his, and he ſtood but three Yards off: However, I have had him ſince many Times in my Hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the Deſcription. His Dreſs was very plain and ſimple, the Faſhion of it between the *Aſiatick* and the *European*; but he had on his Head a light Helmet of Gold, adorned with Jewels, and a Plume on the Creſt. He held his Sword drawn in his Hand, to defend himſelf, if I ſhould happen to break looſe; it was almoſt three

Digitized by Google

Inches long, the Hilt and Scabbard were Gold enriched with Diamonds. His Voice was ſhrill but very clear and articulate, and I could diſtinctly hear it when I ſtood up. The Ladies and Courtiers were all moſt magnificently clad, ſo that the Spot they ſtood upon ſeemed to reſemble a Petticoat ſpread on the Ground, embroidered with Figures of Gold and Silver. His Imperial Majeſty ſpoke often to me, and I returned Anſwers, but neither of us could underſtand a Syllable. There were ſeveral of his Prieſts and Lawyers preſent (as I conjectured by their Habits) who were commanded to addreſs themſelves to me, and I ſpoke to them in as many Languages as I had the leaſt Smattering of, which were *High* and *Low-Dutch*, *Latin*, *French*, *Spaniſh*, *Italian*, and *Lingua Franca*; but all to no Purpoſe. After about two Hours the Court retired, and I was left with a ſtrong Guard, to prevent the Impertinence, and probably the Malice of the Rabble, who were very impatient to croud about me as near as they durſt; and ſome of them had the Imprudence to ſhoot their Arrows at me as I ſate on the Ground by the Door of my Houſe; whereof one very narrowly miſſed my Left Eye. But the Colonel ordered ſix of the Ringleaders to be ſeized, and thought no Puniſhment ſo proper as to deliver them bound into my Hands, which ſome of his Soldiers accordingly did, puſhing them forwards with the But-ends of their Pikes into my Reach: I took them all in my Right Hand, put five of them into my Coat-pocket; and as to the Sixth, I made a Countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor Man ſqualled terribly, and the Colonel and his Officers were in much Pain, eſpecially when they ſaw me take out my Penknife: But I ſoon put them out of Fear;

Digitized by Google

Fear; for, looking mildly, and immediately cutting the Strings he was bound with, I ſet him gently on the Ground, and away he ran. I treated the reſt in the ſame Manner, taking them one by one out of my Pocket; and I obſerved, both the Soldiers and People were highly obliged at this Mark of my Clemency, which was repreſented very much to my Advantage at Court.

TOWARDS Night I got with ſome Difficulty into my Houſe, where I lay on the Ground, and continued to do ſo about a Fortnight; during which Time the Emperor gave Orders to have a Bed prepared for me. Six hundred Beds of the common Meaſure were brought in Carriages, and worked up in my Houſe; an hundred and fifty of their Beds ſown together made up the Breadth and Length, and theſe were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the Hardneſs of the Floor, that was of ſmooth Stone. By the ſame Computation they provided me with Sheets, Blankets, and Coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been ſo long enured to Hardſhips as I.

As the News of my Arrival ſpread through the Kingdom, it brought prodigious Numbers of rich, idle, and curious People to ſee me; ſo that the Villages were almoſt emptied, and great Neglect of Tillage and Houſhold Affairs muſt have enſued, if his Imperial Majeſty had not provided by ſeveral Proclamations and Orders of State againſt this Inconveniency. He directed that thoſe, who had already beheld me, ſhould return home, and not preſume to come within fifty Yards of my Houſe, without Licence from Court; whereby the Secretaries of State got conſiderable Fees.

IN the mean Time, the Emperor held frequent Councils to debate what Courſe ſhould be taken

Digitized by Google

with me; and, I was afterwards assured by a particular Friend, a Person of great Quality, who was as much in the *Secret* as any; that the Court was under many Difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose; that my Diet would be very expensive, and might cause a Famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me, or at least to shoot me in the Face and Hands with poisoned Arrows, which would soon dispatch me: But again they considered, that the Stench of so large a Carcase might produce a Plague in the Metropolis, and probably spread through the whole Kingdom. In the Midst of these Consultations, several Officers of the Army went to the Door of the Great Council-Chamber; and two of them being admitted, gave an Account of my Behaviour to the six Criminals above-mentioned; which made so favourable an Impression in the Breast of his Majesty, and the whole Board, in my Behalf, that an Imperial Commission was issued out, obliging all the Villages nine hundred Yards round the City, to deliver in every Morning six Beeves, forty Sheep, and other Victuals for my Sustenance; together with a proportionable Quantity of Bread and Wine, and other Liquors: For the due Payment of which his Majesty gave Assignments upon his Treasury. For this Prince lives chiefly upon his own Demesnes; seldom, except upon great Occasions, raising any Subsidies upon his Subjects, who are bound to attend him in his Wars at their own Expence. An Establishment was also made of six hundred Persons to be my Domesticks, who had Board-Wages allowed for their Maintenance, and Tents built for them very conveniently on each Side of my Door. It was likewise ordered, that three hundred Taylors should make me a Suit of Cloaths after the Fashion of the Country: That,

six

Digitized by Google

ſix of his Majeſty's greateſt Scholars ſhould be employed to inſtruct me in their Language: And laſtly, that the Emperor's Horſes, and thoſe of the Nobility, and Troops of Guards, ſhould be exerciſed in my Sight, to accuſtom themſelves to me. All theſe Orders were duly put in Execution; and in about three Weeks I made a great Progreſs in learning their Language; during which Time, the Emperor frequently honoured me with his Viſits, and was pleaſed to aſſiſt my Maſters in teaching me. We began already to converſe together in ſome Sort; and the firſt Words I learnt, were to expreſs my Deſire, that he would pleaſe to give me my Liberty; which I every Day repeated on my Knees. His Anſwer, as I could apprehend, was, that this muſt be a Work of Time, not to be thought on without the Advice of his Council; and that firſt I muſt *Lumos Kelmin peſſo deſmar lon Empoſo*; that is, *Swear a Peace with him and his Kingdom.* However, that I ſhould be uſed with all Kindneſs; and he adviſed me to acquire by my Patience and diſcreet Behaviour, the good Opinion of himſelf and his Subjects. He deſired I would not take it ill, if he gave Orders to certain proper Officers to ſearch me; for probably I might carry about me ſeveral Weapons, which muſt needs be dangerous Things, if they anſwered the Bulk of ſo prodigious a Perſon. I ſaid, his Majeſty ſhould be ſatisfied, for I was ready to ſtrip my ſelf, and turn up my Pockets before him. This I delivered, Part in Words, and Part in Signs. He replied, that by the Laws of the Kingdom, I muſt be ſearched by two of his Officers: That he knew this could not be done without my Conſent and Aſſiſtance: That he had ſo good an Opinion of my Generoſity and Juſtice, as to truſt their Perſons in my Hands: That whatever they

Digitized by Google

they took from me ſhould be returned when I left the Country, or paid for at the Rate which I would ſet upon them. I took up the two Officers in my Hands, put them firſt into my Coat-Pockets, and then into every other Pocket about me, except my two Fobs, and another ſecret Pocket which I had no Mind ſhould be ſearched, wherein I had ſome little Neceſſaries of no Conſequence to any but my ſelf. In one of my Fobs there was a Silver Watch, and in the other a ſmall Quantity of Gold in a Purſe. Theſe Gentlemen, having Pen, Ink, and Paper about them, made an exact Inventory of every Thing they ſaw; and when they had done, deſired I would ſet them down, that they might deliver it to the Emperor. This Inventory I afterwards tranſlated into *Engliſh*, and is Word for Word as follows.

IMPRIMIS, In the Right Coat-Pocket of the *Great Man Mountain* (for ſo I interpret the Words *Quinbus Fleſtrin*) after the ſtricteſt Search, we found only one great Piece of coarſe Cloth, large enough to be a Foot-Cloth for your Majeſty's chief Room of State. In the Left Pocket, we ſaw a huge Silver Cheſt, with a Cover of the ſame Metal, which we, the Searchers, were not able to lift. We deſired it ſhould be opened; and one of us ſtepping into it, found himſelf up to the mid-Leg in a Sort of Duſt, ſome Part whereof flying up to our Faces, ſet us both a ſneezing for ſeveral Times together. In his Right Waiſtcoat-Pocket, we found a prodigious Bundle of white thin Subſtances, folded one over another, about the Bigneſs of three Men, tied with a ſtrong Cable, and marked with black Figures; which we humbly conceive to be Writings; every Letter almoſt half as large as the Palm of our Hands. In the Left there was a Sort of Engine,

Digitized by Google

gine, from the Back of which were extended twenty long Poles, reſembling the Palliſado's before your Majeſty's Court; wherewith we conjecture the *Man Mountain* combs his Head; for we did not always trouble him with Queſtions, becauſe we found it a great Difficulty to make him underſtand us. In the large Pocket on the Right Side of his middle Cover, (ſo I tranſlate the Word *Ranfu-Lo*, by which they meant my Breeches) we ſaw a hollow Pillar of Iron, about the Length of a Man, faſtened to a ſtrong Piece of Timber, larger than the Pillar; and upon one Side of the Pillar were huge Pieces of Iron ſticking out, cut into ſtrange Figures; which we know not what to make of. In the Left Pocket, another Engine of the ſame Kind. In the ſmaller Pocket on the Right Side, were ſeveral round flat Pieces of white and red Metal, of different Bulk: Some of the white, which ſeemed to be Silver, were ſo large and heavy, that my Comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the Left Pocket were two black Pillars irregularly ſhaped; we could not, without Difficulty, reach the Top of them as we ſtood at the Bottom of his Pocket: One of them was covered, and ſeemed all of a Piece; but at the upper End of the other, there appeared a white round Subſtance, about twice the Bigneſs of our Heads. Within each of theſe was incloſed a prodigious Plate of Steel; which, by our Orders we obliged him to ſhew us, becauſe we apprehended they might be dangerous Engines. He took them out of their Caſes, and told us, that in his own Country his Practice was to ſhave his Beard with one of theſe, and to cut his Meat with the other. There were two Pockets which we could not enter: Theſe he called his Fobs; they were two large Slits cut into the Top of his middle Cover, but

Digitized by Google

but ſqueezed cloſe by the Preſſure of his Belly. Out of the Right Fob hung a great Silver Chain, with a wonderful Kind of Engine at the Bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was at the End of that Chain; which appeared to be a Globe, half Silver, and half of ſome tranſparent Metal: For on the tranſparent Side we ſaw certain ſtrange Figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, until we found our Fingers ſtopped with that lucid Subſtance. He put this Engine to our Ears, which made an inceſſant Noiſe like that of a Water-Mill: And we conjecture it is either ſome unknown Animal, or the God that he worſhips: But we are more inclined to the latter Opinion, becauſe he aſſured us, (if we underſtood him right, for he expreſſed himſelf very imperfectly) that he ſeldom did any Thing without conſulting it. He called it his Oracle, and ſaid it pointed out the Time for every Action of his Life. From the Left Fob he took out a Net almoſt large enough for a Fiſherman, but contrived to open and ſhut like a Purſe, and ſerved him for the ſame Uſe: We found therein ſeveral maſſy Pieces of yellow Metal, which if they be of real Gold, muſt be of immenſe Value.

HAVING thus, in Obedience to your Majeſty's Commands, diligently ſearched all his Pockets; we obſerved a Girdle about his Waiſt made of the Hyde of ſome prodigious Animal; from which, on the Left Side, hung a Sword of the Length of five Men; and on the Right, a Bag or Pouch divided into two Cells; each Cell capable of holding three of your Majeſty's Subjects. In one of theſe Cells were ſeveral Globes or Balls of a moſt ponderous Metal, about the Bigneſs of our Heads, and required a ſtrong Hand to lift them: The other Cell contained a Heap of certain black Grains, but

of

Digitized by Google

of no great Bulk or Weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the Palms of our Hands.

THIS is an exact Inventory of what we found about the Body of the *Man Mountain*; who uſed us with great Civility, and due Reſpect to your Maſty's Commiſſion. Signed and Sealed on the fourth Day of the eighty ninth Moon of your Majeſty's auſpicious Reign.

Clefren Frelock, Marſi Frelock.

WHEN this Inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me to deliver up the ſeveral Particulars. He firſt called for my Scymiter, which I took out, Scabbard and all. In the mean Time he ordered three thouſand of his choiceſt Troops, who then attended him, to ſurround me at a Diſtance, with their Bows and Arrows juſt ready to diſcharge: But I did not obſerve it; for mine Eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majeſty. He then deſired me to draw my Scymiter, which, although it had got ſome Ruſt by the Sea-Water, was in moſt Parts exceeding bright. I did ſo, and immediately all the Troops gave a Shout between Terror and Surprize; for the Sun ſhone clear, and the Reflection dazzled their Eyes, as I waved the Scymiter to and fro in my Hand. His Majeſty, who is a moſt magnanimous Prince, was leſs daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the Scabbard, and caſt it on the Ground as gently as I could, about ſix Foot from the End of my Chain. The next Thing he demanded was one of the hollow Iron Pillars, by which he meant my Pocket-Piſtols. I drew it out, and at his Deſire, as well as I could, expreſſed to him the Uſe of it, and charging it only with Powder, which

Digitized by Google

which by the Cloſeneſs of my Pouch, happened to eſcape wetting in the Sea, (an Inconvenience that all prudent Mariners take ſpecial Care to provide againſt) I firſt cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid; and then I let it off in the Air. The Aſtoniſhment here was much greater than at the Sight of my Scymiter. Hundreds fell down as if they had been ſtruck dead; and even the Emperor, although he ſtood his Ground, could not recover himſelf in ſome Time. I delivered up both my Piſtols in the ſame Manner as I had done my Scymiter, and then my Pouch of Powder and Bullets; begging him, that the former might be kept from Fire; for it would kindle with the ſmalleſt Spark, and blow up his Imperial Palace into the Air. I likewiſe delivered up my Watch, which the Emperor was very curious to ſee; and commanded two of his talleſt Yeomen of the Guards to bear it on a Pole upon their Shoulders, as Dray-men in *England* do a Barrel of Ale. He was amazed at the continual Noiſe it made, and the Motion of the Minute-hand, which he could eaſily diſcern; for their Sight is much more acute than ours: He asked the Opinions of his learned Men about him, which were various and remote, as the Reader may well imagine without my repeating; although, indeed, I could not very perfectly underſtand them. I then gave up my Silver and Copper Money, my Purſe with nine large Pieces of Gold, and ſome ſmaller ones; my Knife and Razor, my Comb and Silver Snuff-Box, my Handkerchief and Journal Book. My Scymiter, Piſtols and Pouch, were conveyed in Carriages to his Majeſty's Stores; but the reſt of my Goods were returned me.

I HAD, as I before obſerved, one private Pocket which eſcaped their Search, wherein there was a

Pair

Digitized by Google

Pair of Spectacles (which I ſometimes uſe for the Weakneſs of mine Eyes) a Pocket Perſpective, and ſeveral other little Conveniencies, which being of no Conſequence to the Emperor, I did not think my ſelf bound in Honour to diſcover; and I apprehended they might be loſt or ſpoiled if I ventured them out of my Poſſeſſion.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

The Author diverts the Emperor and his Nobility of both Sexes in a very uncommon Manner. The Diverſions of the Court of LILLIPUT *deſcribed. The Author hath his Liberty granted him upon certain Conditions.*

MY Gentleneſs and good Behaviour had gained ſo far on the Emperor and his Court, and indeed upon the Army and People in general, that I began to conceive Hopes of getting my Liberty in a ſhort Time. I took all poſſible Methods to cultivate this favourable Diſpoſition. The Natives came by Degrees to be leſs apprehenſive of any Danger from me. I would ſometimes lie down, and let five or ſix of them dance on my Hand. And at laſt the Boys and Girls would venture to come and play at Hide and Seek in my Hair. I had now made a good Progreſs in underſtanding and ſpeaking their Language. The Emperor had a mind one Day to entertain me with ſeveral of the Country Shows; wherein they exceed all Nations I have known, both for Dexterity and Magnificence. I was diverted with none ſo much

Digitized by Google

much as that of the Rope-Dancers, performed upon a ſlender white Thread, extended about two Foot, and twelve Inches from the Ground. Upon which I ſhall deſire Liberty, with the Reader's Patience, to enlarge a little.

THIS Diverſion is only practiſed by thoſe Perſons who are Candidates for great Employments, and high Favour, at Court. They are trained in this Art from their Youth, and are not always of noble Birth, or liberal Education. When a great Office is vacant, either by Death or Diſgrace, (which often happens) five or ſix of thoſe Candidates petition the Emperor to entertain his Majeſty and the Court with a Dance on the Rope; and whoever jumps the higheſt without falling, ſucceeds in the Office. Very often the chief Miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their Skill, and to convince the Emperor that they have not loſt their Faculty. *Flimnap*, the Treaſurer, is allowed to cut a Caper on the ſtrait Rope, at leaſt an Inch higher than any other Lord in the whole Empire. I have ſeen him do the Summerſet ſeveral Times together, upon a Trencher fixed on the Rope, which is no thicker than a common Packthread in *England*. My Friend *Reldreſal*, principal Secretary for private Affairs, is, in my Opinion, if I am not partial, the ſecond after the Treaſurer; the reſt of the great Officers are much upon a Par.

THESE Diverſions are often attended with fatal Accidents, whereof great Numbers are on Record. I my ſelf have ſeen two or three Candidates break a Limb. But the Danger is much greater, when the Miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their Dexterity: For, by contending to excel themſelves and their Fellows, they ſtrain ſo far, that there is hardly one of them who hath not received a Fall;

Digitized by Google

a Fall; and ſome of them two or three. I was aſſured, that a Year or two before my Arrival, *Flimnap* would have infallibly broke his Neck, if one of the *King's Cuſhions*, that accidentally lay on the Ground, had not weakned the Force of his Fall.

THERE is likewiſe another Diverſion, which is only ſhewn before the Emperor and Empreſs, and firſt Miniſter, upon particular Occaſions. The Emperor lays on a Table three fine ſilken Threads, of ſix Inches long. One is Blue, the other Red, and the third Green. Theſe threads are propoſed as Prizes, for thoſe Perſons whom the Emperor hath a mind to diſtinguiſh by a particular Mark of his Favour. The Ceremony is performed in his Majeſty's great Chamber of State; where the Candidates are to undergo a Tryal of Dexterity very different from the former, and ſuch as I have not obſerved the leaſt Reſemblance of in any other Country of the old or the new World. The Emperor holds a Stick in his Hands, both Ends parallel to the Horriſon, while the Candidates advancing one by one, ſometimes leap over the Stick, ſometimes creep under it backwards and forwards ſeveral Times, according as the Stick is advanced or depreſſed. Sometimes the Emperor holds one End of the Stick, and his firſt Miniſter the other; ſometimes the Miniſter hath it entirely to himſelf. Whoever performs his Part with moſt Agility, and holds out the longeſt in *leaping* and *creeping*, is rewarded with the Blue-coloured Silk; the Red is given to the next, and the Green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the Middle; and you ſee few great Perſons about this Court, who are not adorned with one of theſe Girdles.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE Horſes of the Army, and thoſe of the Royal Stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer ſhy, but would come up to my very Feet, without ſtarting. The Riders would leap them over my Hand as I held it on the Ground; and one of the Emperor's Huntſmen, upon a large Courſer, took my Foot, Shoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious Leap. I had the good Fortune to divert the Emperor one Day, after a very extraordinary Manner. I deſired he would order ſeveral Sticks of two Foot high, and the Thickneſs of an ordinary Cane, to be brought me; whereupon his Majeſty commanded the Maſter of his Woods to give Directions accordingly; and the next Morning, ſix Wood-men arrived with as many Carriages, drawn by eight Horſes to each. I took nine of theſe Sticks, and fixing them firmly in the Ground in a Quadrangular Figure, two Foot and a half ſquare; I took four other Sticks, and tied them parallel at each Corner, about two Foot from the Ground; then I faſtened my Handkerchief to the nine Sticks that ſtood erected; and extended it on all Sides, until it was as tight as the Top of a Drum; and the four parallel Sticks riſing about five Inches higher than the Handkerchief, ſerved as Ledges on each Side. When I had finiſhed my Work, I deſired the Emperor to let a Troop of his beſt Horſe, twenty four in Number, come and exerciſe upon this Plain. His Majeſty approved of the Propoſal, and I took them up one by one in my Hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper Officers to exerciſe them. As ſoon as they got into Order, they divided into two Parties, performed mock Skirmiſhes, diſcharged blunt Arrows, drew their Swords, fled and purſued, attacked and retired; and in ſhort diſcovered the beſt military Diſcipline I ever-

Digitized by Google

I ever beheld. The parallel Sticks ſecured them and their Horſes from falling over the Stage; and the Emperor was ſo much delighted, that he ordered this Entertainment to be repeated ſeveral Days; and once was pleaſed to be lifted up, and give the Word of Command; and, with great Difficulty, perſuaded even the Empreſs her ſelf to let me hold her in her cloſe Chair, within two Yards of the Stage, from whence ſhe was able to take a full View of the whole Performance. It was my good Fortune that no ill Accident happened in theſe Entertainments; only once a fiery Horſe that belonged to one of the Captains, pawing with his Hoof, ſtruck a hole in my Handkerchief, and his Foot ſlipping, he overthrew his Rider and himſelf; but I immediately relieved them both: For, covering the Hole with one Hand, I ſet down the Troop with the other, in the ſame Manner as I took them up. The Horſe that fell was ſtrained in the left Shoulder, but the Rider got no Hurt; and I repaired my Handkerchief as well as I could: However I would not truſt to the Strength of it any more in ſuch dangerous Enterprizes.

ABOUT two or three Days before I was ſet at Liberty, as I was entertaining the Court with theſe Kinds of Feats, there arrived an Expreſs to inform his Majeſty, that ſome of his Subjects riding near the Place where I was firſt taken up, had ſeen a great black Subſtance lying on the Ground, very oddly ſhaped, extending its Edges round as wide as his Majeſty's Bed-chamber, and riſing up in the Middle as high as a Man: That it was no living Creature, as they at firſt apprehended; for it lay on the Graſs without Motion, and ſome of them had walked round it ſeveral Times: That by mounting upon each others Shoulders, they had got to the Top,

Digitized by Google

Top which was flat and even; and, ſtamping upon it, they found it was hollow within: That they humbly conceived it might be ſomething belonging to the *Man-Mountain*; and if his Majeſty pleaſed, they would undertake to bring it with only five Horſes. I preſently knew what they meant; and was glad at Heart to receive this Intelligence. It ſeems, upon my firſt reaching the Shore, after our Shipwreck, I was in ſuch Confuſion, that before I came to the Place where I went to ſleep, my Hat, which I had faſtened with a String to my Head while I was rowing, and had ſtuck on all the Time I was ſwimming, fell off after I came to Land; the String, as I conjecture, breaking by ſome Accident which I never obſerved, but thought my Hat had been loſt at Sea. I intreated his Imperial Majeſty to give Orders it might be brought to me as ſoon as poſſible, deſcribing to him the Uſe and the Nature of it: And the next Day the Waggoners arrived with it, but not in a very good Condition; they had bored two Holes in the Brim, within an Inch and a Half of the Edge, and faſtened two Hooks in the Holes; theſe Hooks were tied by a long Cord to the Harneſs, and thus my Hat was dragged along for above half an *Engliſh* Mile: But the Ground in that Country being extremely ſmooth and level, it received leſs Damage than I expected.

Two Days after this Adventure, the Emperor having ordered that Part of his Army, which quarters in and about his Metropolis, to be in a Readineſs, took a Fancy of diverting himſelf in a very ſingular Manner. He deſired I would ſtand like a *Coloſſus*, with my Legs as far aſunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his General who was an old experienced Leader, and a great

Digitized by Google

Patron of mine) to draw up the Troops in close Order, and march them under me; the Foot by twenty-four in a Breast, and the Horse by sixteen, with Drums beating, Colours flying, and Pikes advanced. This Body consisted of three thousand Foot, and a thousand Horse. His Majesty gave Orders upon Pain of Death, that every Soldier in his March should observe the strictest Decency, with regard to my Person; which, however, could not prevent some of the younger Officers from turning up their Eyes as they passed under me. And, to confess the Truth, my Breeches were at that Time in so ill a Condition, that they afforded some Opportunities for Laughter and Admiration.

I HAD sent so many Memorials and Petitions for my Liberty, that his Majesty at Length mentioned the Matter first in the Cabinet, and then in a full Council; where it was opposed by none, except *Skyresh Bolgolam*, who was pleased, without any Provocation, to be my mortal Enemy. But it was carried against him by the whole Board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That Minister was *Galbet*, or Admiral of the Realm; very much in his Master's Confidence, and a Person well versed in Affairs, but of a morose and sour Complection. However, he was at Length persuaded to comply; but prevailed that the Articles and Conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself. These Articles were brought to me by *Skyresh Bolgolam* in Person, attended by two under Secretaries, and several Persons of Distinction. After they were read, I was demanded to swear to the Performance of them; first in the Manner of my own Country, and afterwards in the Method prescribed by their Laws; which was to hold my Right Foot in my Left

Digitized by Google

Left Hand, to place the middle Finger of my Right Hand on the Crown of my Head, and my Thumb on the Tip of my Right Ear. But, becauſe the Reader may perhaps be curious to have ſome Idea of the Style and Manner of Expreſſion peculiar to that People, as well as to know the Articles upon which I recovered my Liberty; I have made a Tranſlation of the whole Inſtrument, Word for Word, as near as I was able; which I here offer to the Publick.

GOLBASTO MOMAREN EVLAME GURDILO SHEFIN MULLY ULLY GUE, moſt Mighty Emperor of *Lilliput*, Delight and Terror of the Univerſe, whoſe Dominions extend five thouſand Bluſtrugs, (about twelve Miles in Circumference) to the Extremities of the Globe: Monarch of all Monarchs: Taller than the Sons of Men; whoſe Feet preſs down to the Center, and whoſe Head ſtrikes againſt the Sun: At whoſe Nod the Princes of the Earth ſhake their Knees; pleaſant as the Spring, comfortable as the Summer, fruitful as Autumn, dreadful as Winter. His moſt ſublime Majeſty propoſeth to the *Man Mountain*, lately arrived at our Celeſtial Dominions, the following Articles, which by a ſolemn Oath he ſhall be obliged to perform.

FIRST, The *Man Mountain* ſhall not depart from our Dominions, without our Licence under our Great Seal.

SECONDLY, He ſhall not preſume to come into our Metropolis, without our expreſs Order; at which Time, the Inhabitants ſhall have two Hours Warning to keep within their Doors.

Digitized by Google

THIRDLY, The ſaid *Man Mountain* ſhall confine his Walks to our principal high Roads; and not offer to walk or lie down in a Meadow, or Field of Corn.

FOURTHLY, As he walks the ſaid Roads, he ſhall take the utmoſt Care not to trample upon the Bodies of any of our loving Subjects, their Horſes, or Carriages; nor take any of our ſaid Subjects into his Hands without their own Conſent.

FIFTHLY, If an Expreſs require Extraordinary Diſpatch; the *Man Mountain* ſhall be obliged to carry in his Pocket the Meſſenger and Horſe, a ſix Days Journey once in every Moon, and return the ſaid Meſſenger back (if ſo required) ſafe to our Imperial Preſence.

SIXTHLY, He ſhall be our Ally againſt our Enemies in the Iſland of *Blefuſcu*, and do his utmoſt to deſtroy their Fleet, which is now preparing to invade Us.

SEVENTHLY, That the ſaid *Man Mountain* ſhall, at his Times of Leiſure, be aiding and aſſiſting to our Workmen, in helping to raiſe certain great Stones, towards covering the Wall of the principal Park, and other our Royal Buildings.

EIGHTLY, That the ſaid *Man Mountain* ſhall, in two Moons Time, deliver in an exact Survey of the Circumference of our Dominions, by a Computation of his own Paces round the Coaſt.

LASTLY, That upon his ſolemn Oath to obſerve all the above Articles, the ſaid *Man Mountain* ſhall have a daily Allowance of Meat and Drink, ſufficient for the Support of 1724 of our Subjects; with free Acceſs to our Royal Perſon, and other Marks of our Favour. Given at our Palace at *Belfaborac* the twelfth Day of the ninety-firſt Moon of our Reign.

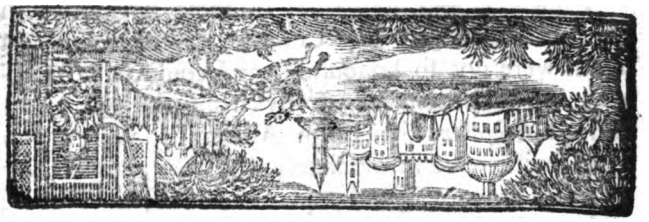
I SWORE

Digitized by Google

I SWORE and ſubſcribed to theſe Articles with great Chearfulneſs and Content, although ſome of them were not ſo honourable as I could have wiſhed; which proceeded wholly from the Malice of *Skyreſh Bolgolam* the High Admiral: Whereupon my Chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full Liberty: The Emperor himſelf, in Perſon, did me the Honour to be by at the whole Ceremony. I made my Acknowledgments; by proſtrating my ſelf at his Majeſty's Feet: But he commanded me to riſe; and after many gracious Expreſſions, which, to avoid the Cenſure of Vanity, I ſhall not repeat; he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful Servant, and well deſerve all the Favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the Future.

THE Reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that in the laſt Article for the Recovery of my Liberty, the Emperor ſtipulates to allow me a Quantity of Meat and Drink ſufficient for the Support of 1724 *Lilliputians*. Some Time after, asking a Friend at Court how they came to fix on that determinate Number; he told me, that his Majeſty's Mathematicians, having taken the Heighth of my Body by the Help of a Quadrant, and finding it to exceed theirs in the Proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the Similarity of their Bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1724 of theirs, and conſequently would require as much Food as was neceſſary to ſupport that Number of *Lilliputians*. By which, the Reader may conceive an Idea of the Ingenuity of that People, as well as the prudent and exact Oeconomy of ſo great a Prince.

Digitized by Google



CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, *the Metropolis of* LILLIPUT *described, together with the Emperor's Palace, a Converſation between the Author and a principal Secretary, concerning the Affairs of that Empire: The Author's Offers to ſerve the Emperor in his Wars.*

THE firſt Requeſt I made after I had obtained my Liberty, was, that I might have Licence to ſee *Mildendo*, the Metropolis; which the Emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial Charge to do no Hurt, either to the Inhabitants, or their Houſes. The People had Notice by Proclamation of my Deſign to viſit the Town. The Wall which encompaſſed it, is two Feet and an half high, and at leaſt eleven Inches broad, ſo that a Coach and Horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong Towers at ten Feet Diſtance. I ſtept over the great *Weſtern* Gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling through the two principal Streets, only in my ſhort Waiſtcoat, for fear of damaging the Roofs and Eves of the Houſes with the Skirts of my Coat. I walked with the utmoſt Circumſpection, to avoid treading on any Stragglers,

Digitized by Google

Stragglers, who might remain in the Streets, although the Orders were very ſtrict, that all People ſhould keep in their Houſes, at their own Peril. The Garret Windows, and Tops of Houſes were ſo crowded with Spectators, that I thought in all my Travels I had not ſeen a more populous Place. The City is an exact Square, each Side of the Wall being five hundred Foot long. The two great Streets which run croſs and divide it into four Quarters, are five Foot Wide. The Lanes and Alleys which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I paſſed, are from twelve to eighteen Inches. The Town is capable of holding five hundred thouſand Souls. The Houſes are from three to five Stories. The Shops and Markets well provided.

THE Emperor's Palace is in the Centre of the City, where the two great Streets meet. It is incloſed by a Wall of two Foot high, and twenty Foot diſtant from the Buildings. I had his Majeſty's Permiſſion to ſtep over this Wall; and the Space being ſo wide between that and the Palace, I could eaſily view it on every Side. The outward Court is a Square of forty Foot, and includes two other Courts: In the inmoſt are the Royal Apartments, which I was very deſirous to ſee, but found it extremely difficult; for the great Gates, from one Square into another, were but eighteen Inches high, and ſeven Inches wide. Now the Buildings of the outer Court were at leaſt five Foot high; and it was impoſſible for me to ſtride over them, without infinite Damage to the Pile, although the Walls were ſtrongly built of hewn Stone, and four Inches thick. At the ſame Time, the Emperor had a great Deſire that I ſhould ſee the Magnificence of his Palace: But this I was not able to do until

three

Digitized by Google

three Days after, which I ſpent in cutting down with my Knife ſome of the largeſt Trees in the Royal Park, about an hundred Yards diſtant from the City. Of theſe Trees I made two Stools, each about three Foot high, and ſtrong enough to bear my Weight. The People having received Notice a ſecond Time, I went again through the City to the Palace, with my two Stools in my Hands. When I came to the Side of the outer Court, I ſtood upon one Stool, and took the other in my Hand: This I lifted over the Roof, and gently ſet it down on the Space between the firſt and ſecond Court, which was eight Foot wide. I then ſtept over the Buildings very conveniently from one Stool to the other, and drew up the firſt after me with a hooked Stick. By this Contrivance I got into the innermoſt Court; and lying down upon my Side, I applied my Face to the Windows of the middle Stories, which were left open on Purpoſe, and diſcovered the moſt ſplendid Apartments, that can be imagined. There I ſaw the Empreſs, and the young Princes in their ſeveral Lodgings, with their chief Attendants about them. Her Imperial Majeſty was pleaſed to ſmile very graciouſly upon me, and gave me out of the Window her Hand to kiſs.

BUT I ſhall not anticipate the Reader with farther Deſcriptions of this Kind, becauſe I reſerve them for a greater Work, which is now almoſt ready for the Preſs; containing a general Deſcription of this Empire, from its firſt Erection, through a long Series of Princes, with a particular Account of their Wars and Politicks, Laws, Learning, and Religion; their Plants and Animals; their peculiar Manners and Cuſtoms, with other Matters very curious and uſeful; my chief Deſign at preſent being only to relate ſuch Events and

Digitized by Google

and Tranſactions as happened to the Publick, or to my ſelf, during a Reſidence of about nine Months in that Empire.

ONE Morning, about a Fortnight after I had obtained my Liberty; *Reldreſal*, Principal Secretary (as they ſtile him) of private Affairs, came to my Houſe, attended only by one Servant. He ordered his Coach to wait at a Diſtance, and deſired I would give him an Hour's Audience; which I readily conſented to, on Account of his Quality, and Perſonal Merits, as well as of the many good Offices he had done me during my Sollicitations at Court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my Ear; but he choſe rather to let me hold him in my Hand during our Converſation. He began with Compliments on my Liberty; ſaid, he might pretend to ſome Merit in it; but, however, added, that if it had not been for the preſent Situation of Things at Court, perhaps I might not have obtained it ſo ſoon. For, *ſaid he*, as flouriſhing a Condition as we appear to be in to Foreigners, we labour under two mighty Evils; a violent Faction at home, and the Danger of an Invaſion by a moſt potent Enemy from abroad. As to the firſt, you are to underſtand, that for above ſeventy Moons paſt, there have been two ſtruggling Parties in this Empire, under the Names of *Trameckſan*, and *Slameckſan*, from the high and low Heels on their Shoes, by which they diſtinguiſh themſelves.

IT is alledged indeed, that the high Heels are moſt agreeable to our ancient Conſtitution: But however this be, his Majeſty hath determined to make uſe of only low Heels in the Adminiſtration of the Government, and all Offices in the Gift of the Crown; as you cannot but obſerve; and particularly,

Digitized by Google

cularly, that his Majeſty's Imperial Heels are lower at leaſt by a *Drurr* than any of his Court; (*Drurr* is a Meaſure about the fourteenth Part of an Inch.) The Animoſities between theſe two Parties run ſo high, that they will neither eat nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the *Trameckſan*, or High-Heels, to exceed us in Number; but the Power is wholly on our Side. We apprehend his Imperial Highneſs, the Heir to the Crown, to have ſome Tendency towards the High-Heels; at leaſt we can plainly diſcover one of his Heels higher than the other; which gives him a Hobble in his Gait. Now, in the Midſt of theſe inteſtine Diſquiets, we are threatened with an Invaſion from the Iſland of *Blefuſcu*, which is the other great Empire of the Univerſe, almoſt as large and powerful as this of his Majeſty. For as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other Kingdoms and States in the World, inhabited by human Creatures as large as your ſelf, our Philoſophers are in much Doubt; and would rather conjecture, that you dropt from the Moon, or one of the Stars; becauſe it is certain, that an hundred Mortals of your Bulk, would, in a ſhort Time, deſtroy all the Fruits and Cattle of his Majeſty's Dominions. Beſides, our Hiſtories of ſix thouſand Moons make no mention of any other Regions, than the two great Empires of *Lilliput* and *Blefuſcu*. Which two mighty Powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a moſt obſtinate War for ſix and thirty Moons paſt. It began upon the following Occaſion. It is allowed on all Hands, that the primitive Way of breaking Eggs before we eat them, was upon the larger End: But his preſent Majeſty's Grand-father, while he was a Boy, going to eat an Egg, and breaking it according to the ancient

Digitized by Google

ancient Practice, happened to cut one of his Fingers. Whereupon the Emperor his Father, publiſhed an Edict, commanding all his Subjects, upon great Penalties, to break the ſmaller End of their Eggs. The People ſo highly reſented this Law, that our Hiſtories tell us, there have been ſix Rebellions raiſed on that Account; wherein one Emperor loſt his Life, and another his Crown. Theſe Civil Commotions were conſtantly fomented by the Monarchs of *Blefuſcu*; and when they were quelled, the Exiles always fled for Refuge to that Empire. It is computed, that eleven thouſand Perſons have, at ſeveral Times, ſuffered Death, rather than ſubmit to break their Eggs at the ſmaller End. Many hundred large Volumes have been publiſhed upon this Controverſy: But the Books of the *Big-Endians* have been long forbidden, and the whole Party rendered incapable by Law of holding Employments. During the Courſe of theſe Troubles, the Emperors of *Blefuſcu* did frequently expoſtulate by their Ambaſſadors, accuſing us of making a Schiſm in Religion, by offending againſt a fundamental Doctrine of our great Prophet *Luſtrog*, in the fifty-fourth Chapter of the *Brundrecal*, (which is their *Alcoran.*) This, however, is thought to be a meer Strain upon the Text: For the Words are theſe; *That all true Believers ſhall break their Eggs at the convenient End:* And which is the convenient End, ſeems, in my humble Opinion, to be left to every Man's Conſcience, or at leaſt in the Power of the chief Magiſtrate to determine. Now the *Big-Endian* Exiles have found ſo much Credit in the Emperor of *Blefuſcu*'s Court; and ſo much private Aſſiſtance and Encouragement from their Party here at home, that a bloody War hath been carried on between the two Empires for ſix and thirty

Digitized by Google

thirty Moons with various Succeſs; during which Time we have loſt forty Capital Ships, and a much greater Number of ſmaller Veſſels, together with thirty thouſand of our beſt Seamen and Soldiers; and the Damage received by the Enemy is reckoned to be ſomewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous Fleet, and are juſt preparing to make a Deſcent upon us: And his Imperial Majeſty, placing great Confidence in your Valour and Strength, hath commanded me to lay this Account of his Affairs before you.

I DESIRED the Secretary to preſent my humble Duty to the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a Foreigner, to interfere with Parties; but I was ready, with the Hazard of my Life, to defend his Perſon and State againſt all Invaders.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

The Author *by an extraordinary Stratagem prevents an Invaſion. A high Title of Honour is conferred upon him Ambaſſadors arrive from the Emperor of* Blefuſcu, *and ſue for Peace. The Empreſs's Apartment on fire by an Accident; the* Author *inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the Palace.*

THE Empire of *Blefuſcu*, is an Iſland ſituated to the North North-Eaſt Side of *Lilliput*, from whence it is parted only by a Channel of eight hundred Yards wide. I had not yet ſeen it, and upon this Notice of an intended Invaſion, I avoided appearing on that Side of the Coaſt, for fear of being diſcovered by ſome of the Enemies Ships, who had received no Intelligence of me; all Intercourſe between the two Empires having been ſtrictly forbidden during the War, upon Pain of Death; and an Embargo laid by our Emperor upon all Veſſels whatſoever. I communicated to his Majeſty a Project I had formed of ſeizing the Enemies whole Fleet; which, as our Scouts aſſured us, lay at Anchor in the Harbour ready to ſail with the firſt fair Wind. I conſulted

Digitized by Google

ſulted the moſt experienced Seamen, upon the Depth of the Channel, which they had often plummed; who told me, that in the Middle at high Water it was ſeventy *Glumgluffs* deep, which is about ſix Foot of *European* Meaſure; and the reſt of it fifty *Glumgluffs* at moſt. I walked to the North-Eaſt Coaſt over againſt *Blefuſcu*; where, lying down behind a Hillock, I took out my ſmall Pocket Perſpective Glaſs, and viewed the Enemy's Fleet at Anchor, conſiſting of about fifty Men of War, and a great Number of Tranſports: I then came back to my Houſe, and gave Order (for which I had a Warrant) for a great Quantity of the ſtrongeſt Cable and Bars of Iron. The Cable was about as thick as Packthread, and the Bars of the Length and Size of a Knitting-Needle. I trebled the Cable to make it ſtronger; and for the ſame Reaſon I twiſted three of the Iron Bars together, binding the Extremities into a Hook. Having thus fixed fifty Hooks to as many Cables, I went back to the North-Eaſt Coaſt, and putting off my Coat, Shoes, and Stockings, walked into the Sea in my Leathern Jerken, about half an Hour before high Water. I waded with what Haſte I could, and ſwam in the Middle about thirty Yards, until I felt the Ground; I arrived to the Fleet in leſs than half an Hour. The Enemy was ſo frighted when they ſaw me, that they leaped out of their Ships, and ſwam to Shore; where there could not be fewer than thirty thouſand Souls. I then took my Tackling, and faſtning a Hook to the Hole at the Prow of each, I tyed all the Cords together at the End. While I was thus employed, the Enemy diſcharged ſeveral thouſand Arrows, many of which ſtuck in my Hands and Face; and beſides the exceſſive Smart, gave me much Diſturbance

Digitized by Google

Diſturbance in my Work. My greateſt Apprehenſion was for mine Eyes, which I ſhould have infallibly loſt, if I had not ſuddenly thought of an Expedient. I kept, among other little Neceſſaries, a Pair of Spectacles in a private Pocket, which, as I obſerved before, had eſcaped the Emperor's Searchers. Theſe I took out, and faſtned as ſtrongly as I could upon my Noſe; and thus armed, went on boldly with my Work in ſpight of the Enemy's Arrows; many of which ſtruck againſt the Glaſſes of my Spectacles, but without any other Effect, further than a little to diſcompoſe them. I had now faſtned all the Hooks, and taking the Knot in my Hand, began to pull; but not a Ship would ſtir, for they were all too faſt held by their Anchors; ſo that the boldeſt Part of my Enterprize remained. I therefore let go the Cord, and leaving the Hooks fixed to the Ships, I reſolutely cut with my Knife the Cables that faſtned the Anchors; receiving above two hundred Shots in my Face and Hands: Then I took up the knotted End of the Cables to which my Hooks were tyed; and with great Eaſe drew fifty of the Enemy's largeſt Men of War after me.

THE *Bleſuſcudians*, who had not the leaſt Imagination of what I intended, were at firſt confounded with Aſtoniſhment. They had ſeen me cut the Cables, and thought my Deſign was only to let the Ships run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: But when they perceived the whole Fleet moving in Order, and ſaw me pulling at the End, they ſet up ſuch a Scream of Grief and Deſpair, that it is almoſt impoſſible to deſcribe or conceive. When I had got out of Danger, I ſtopt a while to pick out the Arrows that ſtuck in my Hands and Face, and rubbed on ſome of the ſame Ointment that

was

Digitized by Google

was given me at my firſt Arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my Spectacles, and waiting about an Hour until the Tyde was a little fallen, I waded through the Middle with my Cargo, and arrived ſafe at the Royal Port of *Lilliput*.

THE Emperor and his whole Court ſtood on the Shore, expecting the Iſſue of this great Adventure. They ſaw the Ships move forward in a large Half-moon, but could not diſcern me, who was up to my Breaſt in Water. When I advanced to the Middle of the Channel, they were yet more in Pain becauſe I was under Water to my Neck. The Emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the Enemy's Fleet was approaching in a hoſtile Manner: But he was ſoon eaſed of his Fears; for the Channel growing ſhallower every Step I made, I came in a ſhort Time within Hearing; and holding up the End of the Cable by which the Fleet was faſtned, I cryed in a loud Voice, *Long live the moſt puiſſant Emperor of* Lilliput! This great Prince received me at my Landing with all poſſible Encomiums, and created me a *Nardac* upon the Spot, which is the higheſt Title of Honour among them.

HIS Majeſty deſired I would take ſome other Opportunity of bringing all the reſt of his Enemy's Ships into his Ports. And ſo unmeaſurable is the Ambition of Princes, that he ſeemed to think of nothing leſs than reducing the whole Empire of *Blefuſcu* into a Province, and governing it by a Viceroy; of deſtroying the *Big-Endian* Exiles, and compelling that People to break the ſmaller End of their Eggs; by which he would remain ſole Monarch of the whole World. But I endeavoured to divert him from this Deſign, by many Arguments

Digitized by Google

guments drawn from the Topicks of Policy as well as Juſtice: And I plainly proteſted, that I would never be an Inſtrument of bringing a free and brave People into Slavery: And when the Matter was debated in Council, the wiſeſt Part of the Miniſtry were of my Opinion.

THIS open bold Declaration of mine, was ſo oppoſite to the Schemes and Politicks of his Imperial Majeſty, that he could never forgive me: He mentioned it in a very artful Manner at Council, where, I was told, that ſome of the wiſeſt appeared, at leaſt by their Silence, to be of my Opinion; but others, who were my ſecret Enemies, could not forbear ſome Expreſſions, which by a Side-wind reflected on me. And from this Time began an Intrigue between his Majeſty, and a Junta of Miniſters maliciouſly bent againſt me, which broke out in leſs than two Months, and had like to have ended in my utter Deſtruction. Of ſo little Weight are the greateſt Services to Princes, when put into the Balance with a Refuſal to gratify their Paſſions.

ABOUT three Weeks after this Exploit, there arrived a ſolemn Embaſſy from *Blefuſcu*, with humble Offers of a Peace; which was ſoon concluded upon Conditions very advantageous to our Emperor; wherewith I ſhall not trouble the Reader. There were ſix Ambaſſadors, with a Train of about five hundred Perſons; and their Entry was very magnificent, ſuitable to the Grandeur of their Maſter, and the Importance of their Buſineſs. When their Treaty was finiſhed, wherein I did them ſeveral good Offices by the Credit I now had, or at leaſt appeared to have at Court; their Excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their Friend, made me a Viſit in

Digitized by Google

Form. They began with many Compliments upon my Valour and Generosity; invited me to that Kingdom in the Emperor their Master's Name; and desired me to shew them some Proofs of my prodigious Strength, of which they had heard so many Wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but shall not interrupt the Reader with the Particulars.

WHEN I had for some Time entertained their Excellencies to their infinite Satisfaction and Surprize, I desired they would do me the Honour to present my most humble Respects to the Emperor their Master, the Renown of whose Virtues had so justly filled the whole World with Admiration, and whose Royal Person I resolved to attend before I returned to my own Country. Accordingly, the next Time I had the Honour to see our Emperor, I desired his general Licence to wait on the *Blefuscudian* Monarch, which he was pleased to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold Manner; but could not guess the Reason, until I had a Whisper from a certain Person, that *Flimnap* and *Bolgolam* had represented my Intercourse with those Ambassadors, as a Mark of Disaffection, from which I am sure my Heart was wholly free. And this was the first Time I began to conceive some imperfect Idea of Courts and Ministers.

IT is to be observed, that these Ambassadors spoke to me by an Interpreter; the Languages of both Empires differing as much from each other as any two in *Europe*, and each Nation priding itself upon the Antiquity, Beauty and Energy of their own Tongues, with an avowed Contempt for that of their Neighbour: Yet our Emperor standing upon the Advantage he had got by the Seizure of their Fleet, obliged them to deliver their Credentials,

Digitized by Google

als, and make their Speech in the *Lilliputian* Tongue. And it muſt be confeſſed, that from the great Intercourſe of Trade and Commerce between both Realms; from the continual Reception of Exiles, which is mutual among them; and from the Cuſtom in each Empire to ſend their young Nobility and richer Gentry to the other, in order to poliſh themſelves by ſeeing the World, and underſtanding Men and Manners; there are few Perſons of Diſtinction, or Merchants, or Seamen, who dwell in the Maritime Parts, but what can hold Converſation in both Tongues; as I found ſome Weeks after, when I went to pay my Reſpects to the Emperor of *Blefuſcu*, which in the Midſt of great Misfortunes, through the Malice of my Enemies, proved a very happy Adventure to me, as I ſhall relate in its proper Place.

THE Reader may remember, that when I ſigned thoſe Articles upon which I recovered my Liberty, there were ſome which I diſliked upon Account of their being too ſervile, neither could any Thing but an extreme Neceſſity have forced me to ſubmit. But being now a *Nardac*, of the higheſt Rank in that Empire, ſuch Offices were looked upon as below my Dignity; and the Emperor (to do him Juſtice) never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an Opportunity of doing his Majeſty, at leaſt, as I then thought, a moſt ſignal Service. I was alarmed at Midnight with the Cries of many hundred People at my Door; by which being ſuddenly awaked, I was in ſome Kind of Terror. I heard the Word *Burglum* repeated inceſſantly; ſeveral of the Emperor's Court making their Way through the Croud, intreated me to come immediately to the Palace, where her Imperial Majeſty's Apartment was on

Digitized by Google

Fire, by the Careleſneſs of a Maid of Honour, who fell aſleep while ſhe was reading a Romance. I got up in an Inſtant; and Orders being given to clear the Way before me; and it being likewiſe a Moon-ſhine Night, I made a ſhift to get to the Palace without trampling on any of the People. I found they had already applied Ladders to the Walls of the Apartment, and were well provided with Buckets, but the Water was at ſome Diſtance. Theſe Buckets were about the Size of a large Thimble, and the poor People ſupplied me with them as faſt as they could; but the Flame was ſo violent that they did little Good. I might eaſily have ſtifled it with my Coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for Haſte, and came away only in my Leathern Jerkin. The Caſe ſeemed wholly deſperate and deplorable; and this magnificent Palace would have infallibly been burnt down to the Ground, if, by a Preſence of Mind, unuſual to me, I had not ſuddenly thought of an Expedient. I had the Evening before drank plentifully of a moſt delicious Wine, called *Glimigrim*, (the *Blefuſcudians* call it *Flunec*, but ours is eſteemed the better Sort) which is very diuretick. By the luckieſt Chance in the World, I had not diſcharged myſelf of any Part of it. The Heat I had contracted by coming very near the Flames, and by my labouring to quench them, made the Wine begin to operate by Urine; which I voided in ſuch a Quantity, and applied ſo well to the proper Places, that in three Minutes the Fire was wholly extinguiſhed; and the reſt of that noble Pile, which had coſt ſo many Ages in erecting, preſerved from Deſtruction.

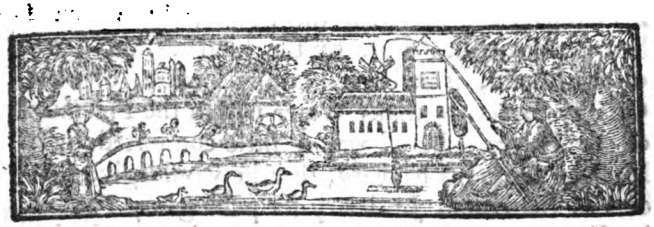
It was now Day-light, and I returned to my Houſe, without waiting to congratulate with the Emperor; becauſe, although I had done a very eminent

Digitized by Google

minent Piece of Service, yet I could not tell how his Majeſty might reſent the Manner by which I had performed it: For, by the fundamental Laws of the Realm, it is Capital in any Perſon, of what Quality ſoever, to make Water within the Precincts of the Palace. But I was a little comforted by a Meſſage from his Majeſty, that he would give Orders to the Grand Juſticiary for paſſing my Pardon in Form; which, however, I could not obtain. And, I was privately aſſured, that the Empreſs conceiving the greateſt Abhorrence of what I had done, removed to the moſt diſtant Side of the Court, firmly reſolved that thoſe Buildings ſhould never be repaired for her Uſe; and in the Preſence of her chief Confidents, could not forbear vowing Revenge.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google



CHAP. VI.

Of the Inhabitants of LILLIPUT; *their Learning, Laws, and Cuſtoms. The Manner of Educating their Children. The Author's Way of living in that Country. His Vindication of a great Lady.*

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the Deſcription of this Empire to a particular Treatiſe, yet in the mean Time I am content to gratify the curious Reader with ſome general Ideas. As the common Size of the Natives is ſomewhat under ſix Inches, ſo there is an exact Proportion in all other Animals, as well as Plants and Trees: For Inſtance, the talleſt Horſes and Oxen are between four and five Inches in height, the Sheep an Inch and a Half, more or leſs; their Geeſe about the Bigneſs of a Sparrow; and ſo the ſeveral Gradations downwards, until you come to the ſmalleſt, which, to my Sight, were almoſt inviſible; but Nature hath adapted the Eyes of the *Lilliputians* to all Objects proper for their View: They ſee with great Exactneſs, but at no great Diſtance. And to ſhew the Sharpneſs of their Sight towards Objects that are near, I have been much pleaſed with obſerving a Cook pulling a Lark, which

which was not ſo large as a common Fly; and a young Girl threading an inviſible Needle with inviſible Silk. Their talleſt Trees are about ſeven Foot high; I mean ſome of thoſe in the great Royal Park, the Tops whereof I could but juſt reach with my Fiſt clinched. The other Vegetables are in the ſame Proportion: But this I leave to the Reader's Imagination.

I SHALL ſay but little at preſent of their Learning, which for many Ages hath flouriſhed in all its Branches among them; But their Manner of Writing is very peculiar; being neither from the Left to the Right, like the *Europeans*; nor from the Right to the Left, like the *Arabians*; nor from up to down, like the *Chineſe*; nor from down to up, like the *Caſcagians*; but aſlant from one Corner of the Paper to the other, like Ladies in *England*.

THEY bury their Dead with their Heads directly downwards; becauſe they hold an Opinion, that in eleven thouſand Moons they are all to riſe again; in which Period, the Earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upſide down, and by this Means they ſhall, at their Reſurrection, be found ready ſtanding on their Feet. The Learned among them confeſs the Abſurdity of this Doctrine; but the Practice ſtill continues, in Compliance to the Vulgar.

THERE are ſome Laws and Cuſtoms in this Empire very peculiar; and if they were not ſo directly contrary to thoſe of my own dear Country, I ſhould be tempted to ſay a little in their Juſtification. It is only to be wiſhed, that they were as well executed. The firſt I ſhall mention, relateth to Informers. All Crimes againſt the State, are puniſhed here with the utmoſt Severity; but if the Perſon accuſed make his Innocence plainly to appear upon his

Digitized by Google

his Tryal, the Accuſer is immediately put to an ignominious Death; and out of his Goods or Lands, the innocent Perſon is quadruply recompenced for the Loſs of his Time, for the Danger he underwent, for the Hardſhip of his Impriſonment, and for all the Charges he hath been at in making his Defence. Or, if that Fund be deficient, it is largely ſupplied by the Crown. The Emperor doth alſo confer on him ſome publick Mark of his Favour; and Proclamation is made of his Innocence through the whole City.

THEY look upon Fraud as a greater Crime than Theft, and therefore ſeldom fail to puniſh it with Death: For, they alledge, that Care and Vigilance, with a very common Underſtanding, may preſerve a Man's Goods from Thieves; but Honeſty hath no Fence againſt ſuperior Cunning; And ſince it is neceſſary that there ſhould be a perpetual Intercourſe of buying and ſelling, and dealing upon Credit; where Fraud is permitted or connived at, or hath no Law to puniſh it, the honeſt Dealer is always undone, and the Knave gets the Advantage. I remember when I was once interceeding with the King for a Criminal who had wronged his Maſter of a great Sum of Money, which he had received by Order, and ran away with; and happening to tell his Majeſty, by Way of Extenuation, that it was only a Breach of Truſt; the Emperor thought it monſtrous in me to offer, as a Defence, the greateſt Aggravation of the Crime: And truly I had little to ſay in Return, farther than the common Anſwer, that different Nations had different Cuſtoms; for, I confeſs, I was heartily aſhamed.

ALTHOUGH we uſually call Reward and Puniſhment, the two Hinges upon which all Government turns; yet I could never obſerve this Maxim to be

put

Digitized by Google

put in Practice by any Nation except that of *Lilliput*. Whoever can there bring ſufficient Proof, that he hath ſtrictly obſerved the Laws of his Country for ſeventy-three Moons, hath a Claim to certain Privileges, according to his Quality and Condition of Life, with a proportionable Sum of Money out of a Fund appropriated for that Uſe: He likewiſe acquires the Title of *Snilpall*, or *Legal*, which is added to his Name, but doth not deſcend to his Poſterity. And theſe People thought it a prodigious Defect of Policy among us, when I told them that our Laws were enforced only by Penalties, without any Mention of Reward. It is upon this Account that the Image of Juſtice, in their Courts of Judicature, is formed with ſix Eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each Side one, to ſignify Circumſpection; with a Bag of Gold open in her right Hand, and a Sword ſheathed in her Left, to ſhew ſhe is more diſpoſed to reward than to puniſh.

IN chuſing Perſons for all Employments, they have more Regard to good Morals than to great Abilities: For, ſince Government is neceſſary to Mankind, they believe that the common Size of human Underſtandings, is fitted to ſome Station or other; and that Providence never intended to make the Management of publick Affairs a Myſtery, to be comprehended only by a few Perſons of ſublime Genius, of which there ſeldom are three born in an Age: But, they ſuppoſe Truth, Juſtice, Temperance, and the like, to be in every Man's Power; the Practice of which Virtues, aſſiſted by Experience and a good Intention, would qualify any Man for the Service of his Country, except where a Courſe of Study is required. But they thought the Want of Moral Virtues was ſo far from being ſupplied

Digitized by Google

plied by ſuperior Endowments of the Mind, that Employments could never be put into ſuch dangerous Hands as thoſe of Perſons ſo qualified; and at leaſt, that the Miſtakes committed by Ignorance in a virtuous Diſpoſition, would never be of ſuch fatal Conſequence to the Publick Weal, as the Practices of a Man, whoſe Inclinations led him to be corrupt, and had great Abilities to manage, to multiply, and defend his Corruptions.

IN like Manner, the Disbelief of a Divine Providence renders a Man uncapable of holding any publick Station: For, ſince Kings avow themſelves to be the Deputies of Providence, the *Lilliputians* think nothing can be more abſurd, than for a Prince to employ ſuch Men as diſown the Authority under which he acteth.

IN relating theſe and the following Laws, I would only be underſtood to mean the original Inſtitutions, and not the moſt ſcandalous Corruptions into which theſe People are fallen by the degenerate Nature of Man. For, as to that infamous Practice of acquiring great Employments by dancing on the Ropes, or Badges of Favour and Diſtinction by leaping over Sticks, and creeping under them; the Reader is to obſerve, that they were firſt introduced by the Grand-father of the Emperor now reigning; and grew to the preſent Height, by the gradual Increaſe of Party and Faction.

INGRATITUDE is among them a capital Crime, as we read it to have been in ſome other Countries: For they reaſon thus; that whoever makes ill Returns to his Benefactor, muſt needs be a common Enemy to the reſt of Mankind, from whom they have received no Obligation; and therefore ſuch a Man is not fit to live.

THEIR Notions relating to the Duties of Parents

Digitized by Google

rents and Children differ extremely from ours. For, ſince the Conjunction of Male and Female is founded upon the great Law of Nature, in order to propagate and continue the Species; the *Lilliputians* will needs have it, that Men and Women are joined together like other Animals, by the Motives of Concupiſcence; and that their Tenderneſs towards their Young, proceedeth from the like natural Principle: For which Reaſon they will never allow, that a Child is under any Obligation to his Father for begetting him, or to his Mother for bringing him into the World; which, conſidering the Miſeries of human Life, was neither a Benefit in itſelf, nor intended ſo by his Parents, whoſe Thoughts in their Love-encounters were otherwiſe employed. Upon theſe, and the like Reaſonings, their Opinion is, that Parents are the laſt of all others to be truſted with the Education of their own Children: And therefore they have in every Town publick Nurſeries, where all Parents, except Cottagers and Labourers, are obliged to ſend their Infants of both Sexes to be reared and educated when they come to the Age of twenty Moons; at which Time they are ſuppoſed to have ſome Rudiments of Docility. Theſe Schools are of ſeveral Kinds, ſuited to different Qualities, and to both Sexes. They have certain Profeſſors well skilled in preparing Children for ſuch a Condition of Life as befits the Rank of their Parents, and their own Capacities as well as Inclinations. I ſhall firſt ſay ſomething of the Male Nurſeries, and then of the Female.

THE Nurſeries for Males of Noble or eminent Birth, are provided with grave and learned Profeſſors, and their ſeveral Deputies. The Clothes and Food of the Children are plain and ſimple. They are

Digitized by Google

are bred up in the Principles of Honour, Juſtice, Courage, Modeſty, Clemency, Religion, and Love of their Country: They are always employed in ſome Buſineſs, except in the Times of eating and ſleeping, which are very ſhort, and two Hours for Diverſions, conſiſting of bodily Exerciſes. They are dreſſed by Men until four Years of Age, and then are obliged to dreſs themſelves, although their Quality be ever ſo great; and the Women Attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the moſt menial Offices. They are never ſuffered to converſe with Servants, but go together in ſmall or greater Numbers to take their Diverſions, and always in the Preſence of a Profeſſor, or one of his Deputies; whereby they avoid thoſe early bad Impreſſions of Folly and Vice to which our Children are ſubject. Their Parents are ſuffered to ſee them only twice a Year; the Viſit is not to laſt above an Hour; they are allowed to kiſs the Child at Meeting and Parting; but a Profeſſor, who always ſtandeth by on thoſe Occaſions, will not ſuffer them to whiſper, or uſe any fondling Expreſſions, or bring any Preſents of Toys, Sweetmeats, and the like.

THE Penſion from each Family for the Education and Entertainment of a Child, upon Failure of due Payment, is levied by the Emperor's Officers.

THE Nurſeries for Children of ordinary Gentlemen, Merchants, Traders, and Handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the ſame Manner; only thoſe deſigned for Trades, are put out Apprentices at ſeven Years old; whereas thoſe of Perſons of Quality continue in their Exerciſes until Fifteen, which anſwers to one and twenty with us: But the Confinement is gradually leſſened for the laſt three Years.

IN

Digitized by Google

IN the Female Nurſeries, the young Girls of Quality, are educated much like the Males, only they are dreſſed by orderly Servants of their own Sex, but always in the Preſence of a Profeſſor or Deputy, until they come to dreſs themſelves, which is at five Years old. And if it be found, that theſe Nurſes ever preſume to entertain the Girls with frightful or fooliſh Stories, or the common Follies practiſed by Chamber-Maids among us; they are publickly whipped thrice about the City, impriſoned for a Year, and baniſhed for Life to the moſt deſolate Parts of the Country. Thus, the young Ladies there are as much aſhamed of being Cowards and Fools, as the Men; and deſpiſe all perſonal Ornaments beyond Decency and Cleanlineſs; neither did I perceive any Difference in their Education, made by their Difference of Sex, only that the Exerciſes of the Females were not altogether ſo robuſt; and that ſome Rules were given them relating to domeſtick Life, and a ſmaller Compaſs of Learning was enjoined them: For, their Maxim is, that among People of Quality, a Wife ſhould be always a reaſonable and agreeable Companion, becauſe ſhe cannot always be young. When the Girls are twelve Years old, which among them is the marriageable Age, their Parents or Guardians take them home, with great Expreſſions of Gratitude to the Profeſſors, and ſeldom without Tears of the young Lady and her Companions.

IN the Nurſeries of Females of the meaner Sort, the Children are inſtructed in all Kinds of Works proper for their Sex and their ſeveral Degrees: Thoſe intended for Apprentices are diſmiſſed at ſeven Years old, the reſt are kept to eleven.

THE meaner Families who have Children, at theſe Nurſeries, are obliged, beſides their annual Penſion,

Digitized by Google

Penſion, which is as low as poſſible, to return to the Steward of the Nurſery a ſmall Monthly Share of their Gettings, to be a Portion for the Child; and therefore all Parents are limited in their Expences by the Law. For the *Lilliputians* think nothing can be more unjuſt, than that People, in Subſervience to their own Appetites, ſhould bring Children into the World, and leave the Burthen of ſupporting them on the Publick. As to Perſons of Quality, they give Security to appropriate a certain Sum for each Child, ſuitable to their Condition; and theſe Funds are always managed with good Husbandry, and the moſt exact Juſtice.

THE Cottagers and Labourers keep their Children at home, their Buſineſs being only to till and cultivate the Earth; and therefore their Education is of little Conſequence to the Publick; but the Old and Diſeaſed among them are ſupported by Hoſpitals: For Begging is a Trade unknown in this Empire.

AND here it may perhaps divert the curious Reader, to give ſome Account of my Domeſticks, and my Manner of living in this Country, during a Reſidence of nine Months and thirteen Days. Having a Head mechanically turned, and being likewiſe forced by Neceſſity, I had made for my ſelf a Table and Chair convenient enough, out of the largeſt Trees in the Royal Park. Two hundred Sempſtreſſes were employed to make me Shirts, and Linnen for my Bed and Table, all of the ſtrongeſt and coarſeſt Kind they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in ſeveral Folds; for the thickeſt was ſome Degrees finer than Lawn. Their Linnen is uſually three Inches wide, and three Foot make a Piece. The Sempſtreſſes took my Meaſure as I lay on the Ground,

Digitized by Google

Ground, one ſtanding at my Neck, and another at my Mid-Leg, with a ſtrong Cord extended, that each held by the End, while the Third meaſured the Length of the Cord with a Rule of an Inch long. Then they meaſured my right Thumb, and deſired no more; for by a Mathematical Computation, that twice round the Thumb is once round the Wriſt, and ſo on to the Neck and the Waiſt; and by the Help of my old Shirt, which I diſplayed on the Ground before them for a Pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred Taylors were employed in the ſame Manner to make me Clothes; but they had another Contrivance for taking my Meaſure. I kneeled down, and they raiſed a Ladder from the Ground to my Neck; upon this Ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a Plum-Line from my Collar to the Floor, which juſt anſwered the Length of my Coat; but my Waiſt and Arms I meaſured my ſelf. When my Clothes were finiſhed, which was done in my Houſe, (for the largeſt of theirs would not have been able to hold them) they looked like the Patch-work made by the Ladies in *England*, only that mine were all of a Colour.

I HAD three hundred Cooks to dreſs my Victuals, in little convenient Huts built above my Houſe, where they and their Families lived, and prepared me two Diſhes a-piece. I took up twenty Waiters in my Hand, and placed them on the Table; an hundred more attended below on the Ground, ſome with Diſhes of Meat, and ſome with Barrels of Wine, and other Liquors, ſlung on their Shoulders; all which the Waiters above drew up as I wanted, in a very ingenious Manner, by certain Cords, as we draw the Bucket up a Well in *Europe*. A Diſh of their Meat was a good Mouthful, and a Barrel of

of their Liquor a reaſonable Draught. Their Mutton yields to ours, but their Beef is excellent. I have had a Sirloin ſo large, that I have been forced to make three Bits of it; but this is rare. My Servants were aſtoniſhed to ſee me eat it Bones and all, as in our Country we do the Leg of a Lark. Their Geeſe and Turkeys I uſually eat at a Mouthful, and I muſt confeſs they far exceed ours. Of their ſmaller Fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the End of my Knife.

ONE Day his Imperial Majeſty being informed of my Way of living, deſired that himſelf, and his Royal Conſort, with the young Princes of the Blood of both Sexes, might have the Happineſs (as he was pleaſed to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed them upon Chairs of State on my Table, juſt over againſt me, with their Guards about them. *Flimnap* the Lord High Treaſurer attended there likewiſe, with his white Staff; and I obſerved he often looked on me with a ſour Countenance, which I would not ſeem to regard, but eat more than uſual, in Honour to my dear Country, as well as to fill the Court with Admiration. I have ſome private Reaſons to believe, that this Viſit from his Majeſty gave *Flimnap* an Opportunity of doing me ill Offices to his Maſter. That Miniſter had always been my ſecret Enemy, although he outwardly careſſed me more than was uſual to the Moroſeneſs of his Nature. He repreſented to the Emperor the low Condition of his Treaſury; that he was forced to take up Money at a great Diſcount; that Exchequer Bills would not circulate under nine *per Cent.* below Par; that I had coſt his Majeſty above a Million and a half of *Sprugs*, (their greateſt Gold Coin, about the Bigneſs of a Spangle;) and upon the whole,

Digitized by Google

whole, that it would be adviſeable in the Emperor to take the firſt fair Occaſion of diſmiſſing me.

I AM here obliged to vindicate the Reputation of an excellent Lady, who was an innocent Sufferer upon my Account. The Treaſurer took a Fancy to be jealous of his Wife, from the Malice of ſome evil Tongues, who informed him, that her Grace had taken a violent Affection for my Perſon; and the Court-Scandal ran for ſome Time, that ſhe once came privately to my Lodging. This, I ſolemnly declare, to be a moſt infamous Falſhood, without any Grounds, farther than that her Grace was pleaſed to treat me with all innocent Marks of Freedom and Friendſhip. I own, ſhe came often to my Houſe, but always publickly, nor ever without three more in the Coach, who were uſually her Siſter and Young Daughter, and ſome particular Acquaintance; but this was common to many other Ladies of the Court. And I ſtill appeal to my Servants round, whether they at any Time ſaw a Coach at my Door without knowing what Perſons were in it. On thoſe Occaſions, when a Servant had given me Notice, my Cuſtom was to go immediately to the Door; and after paying my Reſpects, to take up the Coach and two Horſes very carefully in my Hands, (for if there were ſix Horſes, the Poſtilion always unharnaſſed four) and placed them on a Table, where I had fixed a moveable Rim quite round, of five Inches high, to prevent Accidents. And I have often had four Coaches and Horſes at once on my Table full of Company, while I ſat in my Chair leaning my Face towards them; and when I was engaged with one Sett, the Coachman would gently drive the others round my Table. I have paſſed many an Afternoon very agreeably in theſe Converſations:

Digitized by Google

But, I defy the Treaſurer, or his two Informers, (I will name them, and let them make their beſt of it) *Cluſtril* and *Drunlo*, to prove that any Perſon ever came to me *incognito*, except the Secretary *Reldreſal*, who was ſent by expreſs Command of his Imperial Majeſty, as I have before related. I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long upon this Particular, if it had not been a Point wherein the Reputation of a great Lady is ſo nearly concerned; to ſay nothing of my own; although I had the Honour to be a *Nardac*, which the Treaſurer himſelf is not; for all the World knows he is only a *Clumglum*, a Title inferior by one Degree, as that of a Marqueſs is to a Duke in *England*; yet I allow he preceded me in right of his Poſt. Theſe falſe Informations, which I afterwards came to the Knowledge of, by an Accident not proper to mention, made the Treaſurer ſhew his Lady for ſome Time an ill Countenance, and me a worſe: For although, he were at laſt undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I loſt all Credit with him; and found my Intereſt decline very faſt with the Emperor himſelf, who was indeed too much governed by that Favourite.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

The Author being informed of a Deſign to accuſe him of High Treaſon, maketh his Eſcape to BLEFUSCU. *His Reception there.*

BEFORE I proceed to give an Account of my leaving this Kingdom, it may be proper to inform the Reader of a private Intrigue, which had been for two Months forming againſt me.

I HAD been hitherto all my Life a Stranger to Courts, for which I was unqualified by the Meanneſs of my Condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the Diſpoſitions of great Princes and Miniſters; but never expected to have found ſuch terrible Effects of them in ſo remote a Country, governed as I thought by very different Maxims from thoſe in *Europe*.

WHEN I was juſt preparing to pay my Attendance on the Emperor of *Blefuſcu*; a conſiderable Perſon at Court (to whom I had been very ſerviceable at a Time when he lay under the higheſt Diſpleaſure of his Imperial Majeſty) came to my Houſe very privately at Night in a cloſe Chair, and with-

Digitized by Google

out ſending his Name, deſired Admittance: The Chairmen were diſmiſſed; I put the Chair, with his Lordſhip in it, into my Coat-Pocket; and giving Orders to a truſty Servant to ſay I was indiſpoſed and gone to ſleep, I faſtned the Door of my Houſe, placed the Chair on the Table, according to my uſual Cuſtom, and ſat down by it. After the common Salutations were over, obſerving his Lordſhip's Countenance full of Concern, and enquiring into the Reaſon, he deſired I would hear him with Patience, in a Matter that highly concerned my Honour and my Life. His Speech was to the following Effect, for I took Notes of it as ſoon as he left me.

YOU are to know, ſaid he, that ſeveral Committees of Council have been lately called in the moſt private Manner on your Account: And it is but two Days ſince his Majeſty came to a full Reſolution.

You are very ſenſible that *Skyris Bolgolam* (*Galbet*, or High Admiral) hath been your mortal Enemy almoſt ever ſince your Arrival. His original Reaſons I know not; but his Hatred is much encreaſed ſince your great Succeſs againſt *Blefuſcu*, by which his Glory, as Admiral, is obſcured. This Lord, in Conjunction with *Flimnap* the High Treaſurer, whoſe Enmity againſt you is notorious on Account of his Lady; *Limtoc* the General, *Lalcon* the Chamberlain, and *Balmuff* the Grand Juſticiary, have prepared Articles of Impeachment againſt you, for Treaſon and other capital Crimes.

THIS Preface made me ſo impatient, being conſcious of my own Merits and Innocence, that I was going to interrupt; when he intreated me to be ſilent; and thus proceeded.

OUT

Digitized by Google

OUT of Gratitude for the Favours you have done me, I procured Information of the whole Proceedings, and a Copy of the Articles, wherein I venture my Head for your Service.

Articles of Impeachment againſt QUINBUS FLESTRIN, (*the* Man-Mountain.)

ARTICLE I.

WHEREAS, by a Statute made in the Reign of his Imperial Majeſty *Calin Deffar Plune*, it is enacted, That whoever ſhall make Water within the Precincts of the Royal Palace, ſhall be liable to the Pains and Penalties of High Treaſon: Notwithſtanding, the ſaid *Quinbus Fleſtrin*, in open Breach of the ſaid Law, under Colour of extinguiſhing the Fire kindled in the Apartment of his Majeſty's moſt dear Imperial Conſort, did maliciouſly, traitorouſly, and deviliſhly, by diſcharge of his Urine, put out the ſaid Fire kindled in the ſaid Apartment, lying and being within the Precincts of the ſaid Royal Palace; againſt the Statute in that Caſe provided, *&c.* againſt the Duty, *&c.*

ARTICLE II.

THAT, the ſaid *Quinbus Fleſtrin* having brought the Imperial Fleet of *Bleſuſcu* into the Royal Port, and being afterwards commanded by his Imperial Majeſty to ſeize all the other Ships of the ſaid Empire of *Bleſuſcu*, and reduce that Empire to a Province, to be governed by a Vice-Roy from hence; and to deſtroy and put to Death not only all the *Big-Endian Exiles*, but likewiſe all the People

Digitized by Google

People of that Empire, who would not immediately forſake the *Big-Endian* Hereſy: He the ſaid *Fleſtrin*, like a falſe Traitor againſt his moſt Auſpicious, Serene, Imperial Majeſty, did petition to be excuſed from the ſaid Service, upon Pretence of Unwillingneſs to force the Conſciences, to deſtroy the Liberties and Lives of an innocent People.

ARTICLE III.

THAT, whereas certain Embaſſadors arrived from the Court of *Bleſuſcu* to ſue for Peace in his Majeſty's Court: He the ſaid *Fleſtrin* did, like a falſe Traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the ſaid Embaſſadors; although he knew them to be Servants to a Prince who was lately an open Enemy to his Imperial Majeſty, and in open War againſt his ſaid Majeſty.

ARTICLE IV.

THAT, the ſaid *Quinbus Fleſtrin*, contrary to the Duty of a faithful Subject, is now preparing to make a Voyage to the Court and Empire of *Bleſuſcu*, for which he hath received only verbal Licence from his Imperial Majeſty; and under Colour of the ſaid Licence, doth falſly and traitorouſly intend to take the ſaid Voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of *Bleſuſcu*, ſo late an Enemy, and in open War with his Imperial Majeſty aforeſaid.

THERE are ſome other Articles, but theſe are the moſt important, of which I have read you an Abſtract.

IN the ſeveral Debates upon this Impeachment, it

Digitized by Google

it muſt be confeſſed, that his Majeſty gave many Marks of his great *Lenity*; often urging the Services you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your Crimes. The Treaſurer and Admiral inſiſted, that you ſhould be put to the moſt painful and ignominious Death, by ſetting Fire on your Houſe at Night; and the General was to attend with twenty thouſand Men armed with poiſoned Arrows, to ſhoot you on the Face and Hands. Some of your Servants were to have private Orders to ſtrew a poiſonous Juice on your Shirts and Sheets, which would ſoon make you tear your own Fleſh, and die in the utmoſt Torture. The General came into the ſame Opinion; ſo, that for a long Time there was a Majority againſt you. But his Majeſty reſolving, if poſſible, to ſpare your Life, at laſt brought off the Chamberlain.

UPON this Incident, *Reldreſal*, principal Secretary for private Affairs, who always approved himſelf your true Friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver his Opinion, which he accordingly did; and therein juſtified the good Thoughts you have of him. He allowed your Crimes to be great; but that ſtill there was room for Mercy, the moſt commendable Virtue in a Prince, and for which his Majeſty was ſo juſtly celebrated. He ſaid, the Friendſhip between you and him was ſo well known to the World, that perhaps the moſt honourable Board might think him partial: However, in Obedience to the Command he had received, he would freely offer his Sentiments. That, if his Majeſty in Conſideration of your Services, and purſuant to his own merciful Diſpoſition, would pleaſe to ſpare your Life, and only give Order to put out both your Eyes; he humbly conceived, that by this Expedient, Juſtice might in ſome

Digitized by Google

ſome Meaſure be ſatisfied, and all the World would applaud the *Lenity* of the Emperor, as well as the fair and generous Proceedings of thoſe who have the Honour to be his Counſellors. That, the Loſs of your Eyes would be no Impediment to your bodily Strength, by which you might ſtill be uſeful to his Majeſty. That, Blindneſs is an Addition to Courage, by concealing Dangers from us. That, the Fear you had for your Eyes, was the greateſt Difficulty in bringing over the Enemy's Fleet; and it would be ſufficient for you to ſee by the Eyes of the Miniſters, ſince the greateſt Princes do no more.

THIS Propoſal was received with the utmoſt Diſapprobation by the whole Board. *Bolgolam*, the Admiral, could not preſerve his Temper; but riſing up in Fury, ſaid he wondered how the Secretary durſt preſume to give his Opinion for preſerving the Life of a Traitor: That, the Services you had performed, were, by all true Reaſons of State, the great Aggravation of your Crimes: That you, who were able to extinguiſh the Fire, by diſcharge of Urine in her Majeſty's Apartment (which he mentioned with Horror) might at another Time, raiſe an Inundation by the ſame Means, to drown the whole Palace; and the ſame Strength which enabled you to bring over the Enemy's Fleet, might ſerve, upon the firſt Diſcontent, to carry it back: That he had good Reaſons to think you were a *Big-Endian* in your Heart; and as Treaſon begins in the Heart before it appears in Overt-Acts; ſo he accuſed you as a Traitor on that Account, and therefore inſiſted you ſhould be put to Death.

THE Treaſurer was of the ſame Opinion; he ſhewed to what Streights his Majeſty's Revenue was reduced by the Charge of maintaining you, which would ſoon grow inſupportable: That, the Secretary's

Digitized by Google

Secretary's Expedient of putting out your Eyes, was ſo far from being a Remedy againſt this Evil, that it would probably encreaſe it; as it is manifeſt from the common Practice of blinding ſome Kind of Fowl, after which they fed the faſter, and grew ſooner fat: That, his ſacred Majeſty, and the Council, who are your Judges, were in their own Conſciences fully convinced of your Guilt; which was a ſufficient Argument to condemn you to Death, without the *formal Proofs required by the ſtrict Letter of the Law.*

BUT his Imperial Majeſty, fully determined againſt capital Puniſhment, was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay, that ſince the Council thought the Loſs of your Eyes too eaſy a Cenſure, ſome other may be inflicted hereafter. And your Friend the Secretary humbly deſiring to be heard again, in Anſwer to what the Treaſurer had objected, concerning the great Charge his Majeſty was at in maintaining you; ſaid, that his Excellency, who had the ſole Diſpoſal of the Emperor's Revenue, might eaſily provide againſt this Evil, by gradually leſſening your Eſtabliſhment; by which, for want of ſufficient Food, you would grow weak and faint, and loſe your Appetite, and conſequently decay and conſume in a few Months; neither would the Stench of your Carcaſs be then ſo dangerous, when it ſhould become more than half diminiſhed; and immediately upon your Death, five or ſix thouſand of his Majeſty's Subjects might, in two or three Days, cut your Fleſh from your Bones, take it away by Cart-loads, and bury it in diſtant Parts to prevent Infection; leaving the Skeleton as a Monument of Admiration to Poſterity.

THUS, by the great Friendſhip of the Secretary, the whole Affair was compromiſed. It was ſtrictly

Digitized by Google

ly enjoined, that the Project of ſtarving you by Degrees ſhould be kept a Secret; but the Sentence of putting out your Eyes was entered on the Books; none diſſenting except *Bolgolam* the Admiral, who being a Creature of the Empreſs, was perpetually inſtigated by her Majeſty to inſiſt upon your Death; ſhe having born perpetual Malice againſt you, on Account of that infamous and illegal Method you took to extinguiſh the Fire in her Apartment.

IN three Days your Friend the Secretary will be directed to come to your Houſe, and read before you the Articles of Impeachment; and then to ſignify the great *Lenity* and Favour of his Majeſty and Council; whereby you are only condemned to the Loſs of your Eyes, which his Majeſty doth not queſtion you will gratefully and humbly ſubmit to; and twenty of his Majeſty's Surgeons will attend, in Order to ſee the Operation well performed, by diſcharging very ſharp pointed Arrows into the Balls of your Eyes, as you lie on the Ground.

I LEAVE to your Prudence what Meaſures you will take; and to avoid Suſpicion, I muſt immediately return in as private a Manner as I came.

HIS Lordſhip did ſo, and I remained alone, under many Doubts and Perplexities of Mind.

IT was a Cuſtom introduced by this Prince and his Miniſtry, (very different, as I have been aſſured, from the Practices of former Times) that after the Court had decreed any cruel Execution, either to gratify the Monarch's Reſentment, or the Malice of a Favourite; the Emperor always made a Speech to his whole Council, expreſſing his *great Lenity and Tenderneſs, as Qualities known and confeſſed by all the World.* This Speech was immediately publiſhed through the Kingdom; nor did any Thing terrify the People ſo much as thoſe Encomiums on his

Digitized by Google

his Majesty's Mercy; because it was observed, that the more these Praises were enlarged and insisted on, the more *inhuman* was the Punishment, and the *Sufferer more innocent*. Yet, as to myself, I must confess, having never been designed for a Courtier, either by my Birth or Education, I was so ill a Judge of Things, that I could not discover the *Lenity* and Favour of this Sentence; but conceived it (perhaps erroneously) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my Tryal; for although I could not deny the Facts alledged in the several Articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some Extenuations. But, having in my Life perused many State-Tryals, which I ever observed to terminate as the Judges thought fit to direct; I durst not rely on so dangerous a Decision, in so critical a Juncture, and against such powerful Enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon Resistance: For while I had Liberty, the whole Strength of that Empire could hardly subdue me, and I might easily with Stones pelt the Metropolis to Pieces: But I soon rejected that Project with Horror, by remembring the Oath I had made to the Emperor, the Favours I received from him, and the high Title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I so soon learned the Gratitude of Courtiers, to persuade myself, that his Majesty's *present Severities acquitted me of all past Obligations*.

AT last I fixed upon a Resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some Censure, and not unjustly; for I confess I owe the preserving mine Eyes, and consequently my Liberty, to my own great Rashness and Want of Experience: Because, if I had then known the Nature of Princes and Ministers, which I have since observed in many other Courts, and their Methods of treating Criminals less

Digitized by Google

leſs obnoxious than myſelf; I ſhould with great Alacrity and Readineſs have ſubmitted to ſo *eaſy* a Puniſhment. But hurried on by the Precipitancy of Youth; and having his Imperial Majeſty's Licence to pay my Attendance upon the Emperor of *Blefuſcu*; I took this Opportunity, before the three Days were elapſed, to ſend a Letter to my Friend the Secretary, ſignifying my Reſolution of ſetting out that Morning for *Blefuſcu*, purſuant to the Leave I had got; and without waiting for an Anſwer, I went to that Side of the Iſland where our Fleet lay. I ſeized a large Man of War, tied a Cable to the Prow, and lifting up the Anchors, I ſtript myſelf, put my Cloaths (together with my Coverlet, which I carried under my Arm) into the Veſſel; and drawing it after me, between wading and ſwimming, arrived at the Royal Port of *Blefuſcu*, where the People had long expected me: They lent me two Guides to direct me to the Capital City, which is of the ſame Name; I held them in my Hands until I came within two hundred Yards of the Gate; and deſired them to ſignify my Arrival to one of the Secretaries, and let him know, I there waited his Majeſty's Commands. I had an Anſwer in about an Hour, that his Majeſty, attended by the Royal Family, and great Officers of the Court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred Yards; the Emperor, and his Train, alighted from their Horſes, the Empreſs and Ladies from their Coaches; and I did not perceive they were in any Fright or Concern. I lay on the Ground to kiſs his Majeſty's and the Empreſs's Hands. I told his Majeſty, that I was come according to my Promiſe, and with the Licence of the Emperor my Maſter, to have the Honour of ſeeing ſo mighty a Monarch, and to offer him any Service

Digitized by Google

Service in my Power, conſiſtent with my Duty to my own Prince; not mentioning a Word of my Diſgrace, becauſe I had hitherto no regular Information of it, and might ſuppoſe myſelf wholly ignorant of any ſuch Deſign; neither could I reaſonably conceive, that the Emperor would diſcover the Secret while I was out of his Power: Wherein, however, it ſoon appeared I was deceived.

I SHALL not trouble the Reader with the particular Account of my Reception at this Court, which was ſuitable to the Generoſity of ſo great a Prince; nor of the Difficulties I was in for Want of a Houſe and Bed, being forced to lye on the Ground, wrapt up in my Coverlet.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

The Author, by a lucky Accident, finds Means to leave BLEFUSCU; *and, after ſome Difficulties, returns ſafe to his Native Country.*

THREE Days after my Arrival, walking out of Curioſity to the North-Eaſt Coaſt of the Iſland; I obſerved, about half a League off, in the Sea, ſomewhat that looked like a Boat overturned: I pulled off my Shoes and Stockings, and wading two or three hundred Yards, I found the Object to approach nearer by Force of the Tide; and then plainly ſaw it to be a real Boat, which I ſuppoſed might, by ſome Tempeſt, have been driven from a Ship. Whereupon I returned immediately towards the City, and deſired his Imperial Majeſty to lend me twenty of the talleſt Veſſels he had left after the Loſs of his Fleet, and three thouſand Seamen under the Command of his Vice-Admiral. This Fleet ſailed round, while I went back the ſhorteſt Way to the Coaſt, where I firſt diſcovered the Boat; I found the Tide had driven it ſtill nearer; the Seamen were all provided with Cordage, which I had beforehand

Digitized by Google

beforehand twiſted to a ſufficient Strength. When the Ships came up, I ſtript myſelf, and waded until I came within an hundred Yards of the Boat; after which I was forced to ſwim until I got up to it. The Seamen threw me the End of the Cord, which I faſtened to a Hole in the fore-part of the Boat, and the other End to a Man of War: But I found all my Labour to little Purpoſe; for being out of my Depth, I was not able to work. In this Neceſſity, I was forced to ſwim behind, and puſh the Boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my Hands; and the Tide favouring me, I advanced ſo far, that I could juſt hold up my Chin and feel the Ground. I reſted two or three Minutes, and then gave the Boat another Shove, and ſo on, until the Sea was no higher than my Arm-pits. And now the moſt laborious Part being over, I took out my other Cables which were ſtowed in one of the Ships, and faſtening them firſt to the Boat, and then to nine of the Veſſels which attended me; the Wind being favourable, the Seamen towed, and I ſhoved until we arrived within forty Yards of the Shore; and waiting until the Tide was out, I got dry to the Boat, and by the Aſſiſtance of two thouſand Men, with Ropes and Engines, I made a Shift to turn it on its Bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I SHALL not trouble the Reader with the Difficulties I was under by the Help of certain Paddles, which coſt me ten Days making, to get my Boat to the Royal Port of *Blefuſcu*; where a mighty Concourſe of People appeared upon my Arrival, full of Wonder at the Sight of ſo prodigious a Veſſel. I told the Emperor, that my good Fortune had thrown this Boat in my Way, to carry me to ſome Place from whence I might return into my native

Digitized by Google

native Country; and begged his Majesty's Orders for getting Materials to fit it up; together with his Licence to depart; which, after some kind Expostulations, he was pleased to grant.

I DID very much wonder, in all this Time, not to have heard of any Express relating to me from our Emperor to the Court of *Blefuscu*. But I was afterwards given privately to understand, that his Imperial Majesty never imagining I had the least Notice of his Designs, believed I was only gone to *Blefuscu* in Performance of my Promise, according to the Licence he had given me, which was well known at our Court; and would return in a few Days when that Ceremony was ended. But he was at last in Pain at my long Absence; and, after consulting with the Treasurer, and the rest of that Cabal; a Person of Quality was dispatched with the Copy of the Articles against me. This Envoy had Instructions to represent to the Monarch of *Blefuscu*, the great *Lenity* of his Master, who was content to punish me no further than with the Loss of mine Eyes: That I had fled from Justice, and if I did not return in two Hours, I should be deprived of my Title of *Nardac*, and declared a Traitor. The Envoy further added; that in order to maintain the Peace and Amity between both Empires, his Master expected, that his Brother of *Blefuscu* would give Orders to have me sent back to *Lilliput*, bound Hand and Foot, to be punished as a Traitor.

THE Emperor of *Blefuscu* having taken three Days to consult, returned an Answer consisting of many Civilities and Excuses. He said, that as for sending me bound, his Brother knew it was impossible; that although I had deprived him of his Fleet, yet he owed great Obligations to me for many good

Digitized by Google

good Offices I had done him in making the Peace. That however, both their Majeſties would ſoon be made eaſy; for I had found a prodigious Veſſel on the Shore, able to carry me on the Sea, which he had given Order to fit up with my own Aſſiſtance and Direction, and he hoped in a few Weeks both Empires would be freed from ſo inſupportable an Incumbrance.

WITH this Anſwer the Envoy returned to *Lilliput*, and the Monarch of *Blefuſcu* related to me all that had paſſed; offering me at the ſame Time (but under the ſtricteſt Confidence) his gracious Protection, if I would continue in his Service; wherein although I believed him ſincere, yet I reſolved never more to put any Confidence in Princes or Miniſters, where I could poſſibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due Acknowledgments for his favourable Intentions, I humbly begged to be excuſed. I told him, that ſince Fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a Veſſel in my Way; I was reſolved to venture myſelf in the Ocean, rather than be an Occaſion of Difference between two ſuch mighty Monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all diſpleaſed; and I diſcovered by a certain Accident, that he was very glad of my Reſolution, and ſo were moſt of his Miniſters.

THESE Conſiderations moved me to haſten my Departure ſomewhat ſooner than I intended; to which the Court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred Workmen were employed to make two Sails to my Boat, according to my Directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their ſtrongeſt Linnen together. I was at the Pains of making Ropes and Cables, by twiſting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickeſt and ſtrongeſt of theirs. A great Stone that I happened to find, after a long

Digitized by Google

Search by the Sea-Shore, ſerved me for an Anchor. I had the Tallow of three hundred Cows for greaſing my Boat, and other Uſes. I was at incredible Pains in cutting down ſome of the largeſt Timber Trees for Oars and Maſts, wherein I was, however, much aſſiſted by his Majeſty's Ship-Carpenters, who helped me in ſmoothing them, after I had done the rough Work.

IN about a Month, when all was prepared, I ſent to receive his Majeſty's Commands, and to take my leave. The Emperor and Royal Family came out of the Palace; I lay down on my Face to kiſs his Hand, which he very graciouſly gave me; ſo did the Empreſs, and young Princes of the Blood, His Majeſty preſented me with fifty Purſes of two hundred *Sprugs* a-piece, together with his Picture at full Length, which I put immediately into one of my Gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The Ceremonies at my Departure were too many to trouble the Reader with at this Time.

I STORED the Boat with the Carcaſes of an hundred Oxen, and three hundred Sheep, with Bread and Drink proportionable, and as much Meat ready dreſſed as four hundred Cooks could provide. I took with me ſix Cows and two Bulls alive, with as many Ewes and Rams, intending to carry them into my own Country, and propagate the Breed. And to feed them on board, I had a good Bundle of Hay, and a Bag of Corn. I would gladly have taken a Dozen of the Natives; but this was a Thing the Emperor would by no means permit; and beſides a diligent Search into my Pockets, his Majeſty engaged my Honour not to carry away any of his Subjects, although with their own Conſent and Deſire.

HAVING

Digitized by Google

HAVING thus prepared all Things as well as I was able; I ſet Sail on the twenty-fourth Day of *September*, 1701, at ſix in the Morning; and when I had gone about four Leagues to the Northward, the Wind being at South-Eaſt, at ſix in the Evening, I deſcryed a ſmall Iſland about half a League to the North-Weſt. I advanced forward, and caſt Anchor on the Lee-ſide of the Iſland, which ſeemed to be uninhabited. I then took ſome Refreſhment, and went to my Reſt. I ſlept well, and as I conjecture at leaſt ſix Hours; for I found the Day broke in two Hours after I awaked. It was a clear Night; I eat my Breakfaſt before the Sun was up; and heaving Anchor, the Wind being favourable, I ſteered the ſame Courſe that I had done the Day before, wherein I was directed by my Pocket-Compaſs. My Intention was to reach, if poſſible, one of thoſe Iſlands, which I had Reaſon to believe lay to the North-Eaſt of *Van Diemen*'s Land. I diſcovered nothing all that Day; but upon the next, about three in the Afternoon, when I had by my Computation made twenty-four Leagues from *Blefuſcu*, I deſcryed a Sail ſteering to the South-Eaſt; my Courſe was due Eaſt. I hailed her, but could get no Anſwer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the Wind ſlackened. I made all the Sail I could, and in half an Hour ſhe ſpyed me, then hung out her Antient, and diſcharged a Gun. It is not eaſy to expreſs the Joy I was in upon the unexpected Hope of once more ſeeing my beloved Country, and the dear Pledges I left in it. The Ship ſlackened her Sails, and I came up with her between five and ſix in the Evening, *September* 26; but my Heart leapt within me to ſee her *Engliſh* Colours. I put my Cows and Sheep into my Coat-Pockets, and got on board with all

Digitized by Google

my little Cargo of Proviſions. The Veſſel was an *Engliſh* Merchant-man returning from *Japan* by the *North* and *South Seas*; the Captain, Mr. *John Biddle* of *Deptford*, a very civil Man, and an excellent Sailor. We were now in the Latitude of 30 Degrees South; there were about fifty Men in the Ship; and here I met an old Comrade of mine, one *Peter Williams*, who gave me a good Character to the Captain. This Gentleman treated me with Kindneſs, and deſired I would let him know what Place I came from laſt, and whither I was bound; which I did in few Words; but he thought I was raving, and that the Dangers I underwent had diſturbed my Head; whereupon I took my black Cattle and Sheep out of my Pocket, which, after great Aſtoniſhment, clearly convinced him of my Veracity. I then ſhewed him the Gold given me by the Emperor of *Blefuſcu*, together with his Majeſty's Picture at full Length, and ſome other Rarities of that Country. I gave him two Purſes of two hundred *Sprugs* each, and promiſed, when we arrived in *England*, to make him a Preſent of a Cow and a Sheep big with Young.

I SHALL not trouble the Reader with a particular Account of this Voyage; which was very proſperous for the moſt Part. We arrived in the *Downs* on the 13th of *April* 1702. I had only one Misfortune, that the Rats on board carried away one of my Sheep; I found her Bones in a Hole picked clean from the Fleſh. The reſt of my Cattle I got ſafe on Shore, and ſet them a grazing in a Bowling-Green at *Greenwich*, where the Fineneſs of the Graſs made them feed very heartily, although I had always feared the contrary: Neither could I poſſibly have preſerved them in ſo long a Voyage, if the Captain had not allowed me ſome of

Digitized by Google

of his beſt Bisket, which rubbed to Powder, and mingled with Water, was their conſtant Food. The ſhort Time I continued in *England*, I made a conſiderable Profit by ſhewing my Cattle to many Perſons of Quality, and others: And before I began my ſecond Voyage, I ſold them for ſix hundred Pounds. Since my laſt Return, I find the Breed is conſiderably increaſed, eſpecially the Sheep; which I hope will prove much to the Advantage of the Woollen Manufacture, by the Fineneſs of the Fleeces.

I STAYED but two Months with my Wife and Family; for my inſatiable Deſire of ſeeing foreign Countries would ſuffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred Pounds with my Wife, and fixed her in a good Houſe at *Redriff*. My remaining Stock I carried with me, Part in Money, and Part in Goods, in hopes to improve my Fortunes. My eldeſt Uncle, *John*, had left me an Eſtate in Land, near *Epping*, of about thirty Pounds a Year; and I had a long Leaſe of the *Black-Bull* in *Fetter-Lane*, which yielded me as much more: So, that I was not in any Danger of leaving my Family upon the Pariſh. My Son *Johnny*, named ſo after his Uncle, was at the Grammar-School, and a towardly Child. My Daughter *Betty* (who is now well married, and hath Children) was then at her Needle-Work. I took Leave of my Wife, and Boy and Girl, with Tears on both Sides; and went on board the *Adventurer*, a Merchant-Ship of three hundred Tons, bound for *Surat*, Captain *John Nicholas* of *Liverpool*, Commander. But my Account of this Voyage muſt be referred to the ſecond Part of my Travels.

The End of the firſt Part.

Digitized by Google

TRAVELS.

PART II.

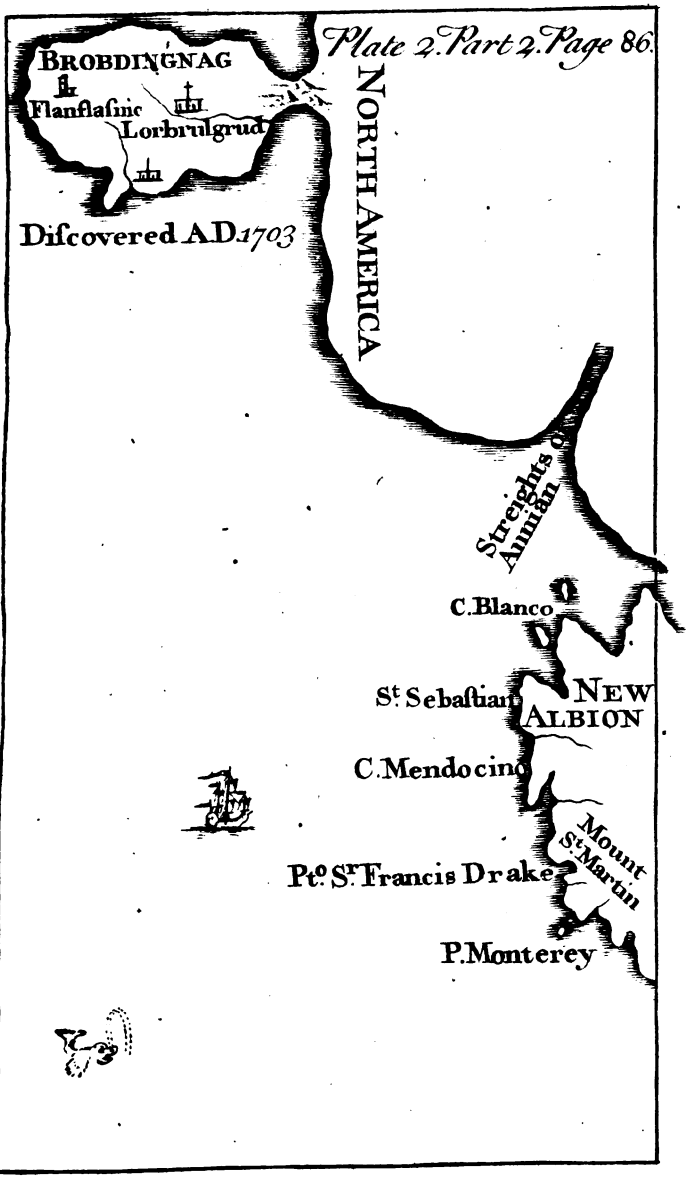
A Voyage to BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great Storm deſcribed. The long Boat ſent to fetch Water, the Author goes with it to diſcover the Country. He is left on Shore, is ſeized by one of the Natives, and carried to a Farmer's Houſe. His Reception there, with ſeveral Accidents that happened there. A Deſcription of the Inhabitants.

HAVING been condemned by Nature and Fortune to an active and reſtleſs Life; in ten Months after my Return, I again left my native Country and took ſhipping in the *Downs* on the 20th Day of *June* 1702, in the *Adventure*, Capt. *John Nicholas*, a *Corniſh* Man, Commander, bound for

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

for *Surat*. We had a very prosperous Gale until we arrived at the Cape of *Good-Hope*, where we landed for fresh Water; but discovering a Leak we unshipped our Goods, and wintered there; for the Captain falling sick of an Ague, we could not leave the Cape until the End of *March*. We then set sail, and had a good Voyage until we passed the *Streights* of *Madagascar*; but having got Northward of that Island, and to about five Degrees South-Latitude, the Winds, which in those Seas are observed to blow a constant equal Gale between the North and West, from the Beginning of *December* to the Beginning of *May*, on the 19th of *April* began to blow with much greater Violence, and more Westerly than usual; continuing so for twenty Days together, during which Time we were driven a little to the East of the *Malucca* Islands, and about three Degrees Northward of the Line, as our Captain found by an Observation he took the 2d of *May*, at which Time the Wind ceased, and it was a perfect Calm, whereat I was not a little rejoyced. But he being a Man well experienced in the Navigation of those Seas, bid us all prepare against a Storm, which accordingly happened the Day following: For a Southern Wind, called the Southern *Monsoon*, began to set in.

FINDING it was like to overblow, we took in our Sprit-sail, and stood by to hand the Fore-sail; but making foul Weather, we looked the Guns were all fast, and handed the Missen. The Ship lay very broad off, so we thought it better spooning before the Sea, than trying or hulling. We reeft the Fore-sail and set him, we hawled aft the Foresheet; the Helm was hard a-Weather. The Ship wore bravely. We belayed the Foredown-hall; but the Sail was split, and we hawled down the Yard,

and

and got the Sail into the Ship, and unbound all the Things clear of it. It was a very fierce Storm; the Sea broke ſtrange and dangerous. We hawled off upon the Lanniard of the Whip-ſtaff, and helped the Man at Helm. We could not get down our Top-Maſt, but let all ſtand, becauſe ſhe ſcudded before the Sea very well, and we knew that the Top-Maſt being aloft, the Ship was the wholeſomer, and made better way through the Sea, ſeeing we had Sea-room. When the Storm was over, we ſet Fore-ſail and Main-ſail, and brought the Ship to. Then we ſet the Miſſen, Maintop-Sail and the Foretop-Sail. Our Courſe was Eaſt North-Eaſt, the Wind was at South-Weſt. We got the Starboard Tack aboard, we caſt off our Weather-braces and Lifts; we ſet in the Lee-braces, and hawled forward by the Weather-bowlings, and hawled them tight, and belayed them, and hawled over the Miſſen Tack to Windward, and kept her full and by as near as ſhe would lye.

DURING this Storm, which was followed by a ſtrong Wind Weſt-South-Weſt, we were carried by my Computation about five hundred Leagues to the Eaſt, ſo that the oldeſt Sailor on board could not tell in what Part of the World we were. Our Proviſions held out well, our Ship was ſtaunch, and our Crew all in good Health; but we lay in the utmoſt Diſtreſs for Water. We thought it beſt to hold on the ſame Courſe rather than turn more Northerly, which might have brought us to the North-Weſt Parts of great *Tartary*, and into the frozen Sea.

ON the 16th Day of *June* 1703, a Boy on the Top-maſt diſcovered Land. On the 17th we came in full View of a great Iſland or Continent, (for we knew not whither) on the South-ſide whereof was

Digitized by Google

was a ſmall Neck of Land jutting out into the Sea, and a Creek too ſhallow to hold a Ship of above one hundred Tuns. We caſt Anchor within a League of this Creek, and our Captain ſent a dozen of his Men well armed in the Long Boat, with Veſſels for Water, if any could be found. I deſired his Leave to go with them, that I might ſee the Country, and make what Diſcoveries I could. When we came to Land we ſaw no River or Spring, nor any Sign of Inhabitants. Our Men therefore wandered on the Shore to find out ſome freſh Water near the Sea, and I walked alone about a Mile on the other Side, where I obſerved the Country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and ſeeing nothing to entertain my Curioſity, I returned gently down towards the Creek; and the Sea being full in my View, I ſaw our Men already got into the Boat, and rowing for Life to the Ship. I was going to halloo after them, although it had been to little Purpoſe, when I obſerved a huge Creature walking after them in the Sea, as faſt as he could: He waded not much deeper than his Knees, and took prodigious Strides: But our Men had the ſtart of him half a League, and the Sea thereabouts being full of ſharp pointed Rocks, the Monſter was not able to overtake the Boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durſt not ſtay to ſee the Iſſue of that Adventure; but run as faſt as I could the Way I firſt went; and then climbed up a ſteep Hill, which gave me ſome Proſpect of the Country. I found it fully cultivated; but that which firſt ſurprized me was the Length of the Graſs, which in thoſe Grounds that ſeemed to be kept for Hay, was above twenty Foot high.

I FELL into a high Road, for ſo I took it to be, although it ſerved to the Inhabitants only as a Foot

Digitized by Google

Foot Path through a Field of Barley. Here I walked on for ſome Time, but could ſee little on either Side, it being now near Harveſt, and the Corn riſing at leaſt forty Foot. I was an Hour walking to the End of this Field; which was fenced in with a Hedge of at leaſt one hundred and twenty Foot high, and the Trees ſo lofty that I could make no Computation of their Altitude. There was a Stile to paſs from this Field into the next: It had four Steps, and a Stone to croſs over when you came to the utmoſt. It was impoſſible for me to climb this Stile, becauſe every Step was ſix Foot high, and the upper Stone above twenty. I was endeavouring to find ſome Gap in the Hedge; when I diſcovered one of the Inhabitants in the next Field advancing towards the Stile, of the ſame Size with him whom I ſaw in the Sea purſuing our Boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary Spire-Steeple; and took about ten Yards at every Stride, as near as I could gueſs. I was ſtruck with the utmoſt Fear and Aſtoniſhment, and ran to hide my ſelf in the Corn, from whence I ſaw him at the Top of the Stile, looking back into the next Field on the right Hand; and heard him call in a Voice many Degrees louder than a ſpeaking Trumpet; but the Noiſe was ſo high in the Air, that at firſt I certainly thought it was Thunder. Whereupon ſeven Monſters like himſelf came towards him with Reaping-Hooks in their Hands, each Hook about the largeneſs of ſix Scythes. Theſe People were not ſo well clad as the firſt, whoſe Servants or Labourers they ſeemed to be. For, upon ſome Words he ſpoke, they went to reap the Corn in the Field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a Diſtance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme Difficulty; for the Stalks of the Corn were ſometimes not above a Foot

Digitized by Google

a Foot diſtant, ſo that I could hardly ſqueeze my Body betwixt them. However, I made a ſhift to go forward until I came to a part of the Field where the Corn had been laid by the Rain and Wind: Here it was impoſſible for me to advance a Step; for the Stalks were ſo interwoven that I could not creep through, and the Beards of the fallen Ears ſo ſtrong and pointed, that they pierced through my Cloaths into my Fleſh. At the ſame Time I heard the Reapers not above an hundred Yards behind me. Being quite diſpirited with Toil, and wholly overcome by Grief and Deſpair, I lay down between two Ridges, and heartily wiſhed I might there end my Days. I bemoaned my deſolate Widow, and fatherleſs Children: I lamented my own Folly and Wilfulneſs in attempting a ſecond Voyage againſt the Advice of all my Friends and Relations. In this terrible Agitation of Mind I could not forbear thinking of *Lilliput*, whoſe Inhabitants looked upon me as the greateſt Prodigy that ever appeared in the World; where I was able to draw an Imperial Fleet in my Hand, and perform thoſe other Actions which will be recorded for ever in the Chronicles of that Empire, while Poſterity ſhall hardly believe them, although atteſted by Millions. I reflected what a Mortification it muſt prove to me to appear as inconſiderable in this Nation, as one ſingle *Lilliputian* would be among us. But, this I conceived was to be the leaſt of my Misfortunes: For, as human Creatures are obſerved to be more ſavage and cruel in Proportion to their Bulk; what could I expect but to be a Morſel in the Mouth of the firſt among theſe enormous Barbarians, who ſhould happen to ſeize me? Undoubtedly Philoſophers are in the Right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little, otherwiſe than by Compariſon:

Digitized by Google

ſon: It might have pleaſed Fortune to let the *Lilliputians* find ſome Nation, where the People were as diminutive with reſpect to them as they were to me. And who knows but that even this prodigious Race of Mortals might be equally overmatched in ſome diſtant Part of the World, whereof we have yet no Diſcovery?

SCARED and confounded as I was, I could not forbear going on with theſe Reflections; when one of the Reapers approaching within ten Yards of the Ridge where I lay, made me apprehend, that with the next Step I ſhould be ſquaſhed to Death under his Foot, or cut in two with his Reaping-Hook. And therefore when he was again about to move, I ſcreamed as loud as Fear could make me. Whereupon the huge Creature trod ſhort, and looking round about under him for ſome Time, at laſt eſpied me as I lay on the Ground. He conſidered a while with the Caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a ſmall dangerous Animal in ſuch a Manner that it ſhall not be able either to ſcratch or to bite him; as I my ſelf have ſometimes done with a *Weaſel* in *England*. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the Middle between his Fore-finger and Thumb, and brought me within three Yards of his Eyes, that he might behold my Shape more perfectly. I gueſſed his Meaning; and my good Fortune gave me ſo much Preſence of Mind, that I reſolved not to ſtruggle in the leaſt, as he held me in the Air above ſixty Foot from the Ground; although he grievouſly pinched my Sides, for fear I ſhould ſlip through his Fingers. All I ventured was to raiſe mine Eyes towards the Sun, and place my Hands together in a ſupplicating Poſture, and to ſpeak ſome Words in an humble melancholy Tone, ſuitable to the Condition I then was in. For, I apprehended every Moment that he would daſh me againſt

Digitized by Google

againſt the Ground, as we uſually do any little hateful Animal which we have a Mind to deſtroy. But my good Star would have it, that he appeared pleaſed with my Voice and Geſtures, and began to look upon me as a Curioſity; much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate Words, although he could not underſtand them. In the mean Time, I was not able to forbear groaning and ſhedding Tears, and turning my Head towards my Sides; letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the Preſſure of his Thumb and Finger. He ſeemed to apprehend my Meaning; for, lifting up the Lappet of his Coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his Maſter, who was a ſubſtantial Farmer, and the ſame Perſon I had firſt ſeen in the Field.

THE Farmer having (as I ſuppoſed by their Talk) received ſuch an Account of me as his Servant could give him, took a Piece of a ſmall Straw, about the Size of a walking Staff, and therewith lifted up the Lappets of my Coat; which it ſeems he thought to be ſome Kind of covering that Nature had given me. He blew my Hairs aſide to take a better View of my Face. He called his Hinds about him, and asked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever ſeen in the Fields any little Creature that reſembled me. He then placed me ſoftly on the Ground upon all four; but I got immediately up, and walked ſlowly backwards and forwards, to let thoſe People ſee I had no Intent to run away. They all ſate down in a Circle about me, the better to obſerve my Motions. I pulled off my Hat, and made a low Bow towards the Farmer: I fell on my Knees, and lifted up my Hands and Eyes, and ſpoke ſeveral Words as loud as I could: I took a Purſe of Gold out of my Pocket,

Digitized by Google

Pocket, and humbly preſented it to him. He received it on the Palm of his Hand, then applied it cloſe to his Eye, to ſee what it was, and afterwards turned it ſeveral Times with the Point of a Pin, (which he took out of his Sleeve,) but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a Sign that he ſhould place his Hand on the Ground: I then took the Purſe, and opening it, poured all the Gold into his Palm. There were ſix *Spaniſh* Pieces of four Piſtoles each, beſides twenty or thirty ſmaller Coins. I ſaw him wet the Tip of his little Finger upon his Tongue, and take up one of my largeſt Pieces, and then another; but he ſeemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a Sign to put them again into my Purſe, and the Purſe again into my Pocket; which after offering to him ſeveral Times, I thought it beſt to do.

THE Farmer by this Time was convinced I muſt be a rational Creature. He ſpoke often to me, but the Sound of his Voice pierced my Ears like that of a Water-Mill; yet his Words were articulate enough. I anſwered as loud as I could in ſeveral Languages; and he often laid his Ear within two Yards of me, but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then ſent his Servants to their Work, and taking his Handkerchief out of his Pocket, he doubled and ſpread it on his Hand, which he placed flat on the Ground with the Palm upwards, making me a Sign to ſtep into it, as I could eaſily do, for it was not above a Foot in thickneſs. I thought it my Part to obey; and for fear of falling, laid my ſelf at full Length upon the Handkerchief, with the Remainder of which he lapped me up to the Head for further Security; and in this Manner carried me home to his

Digitized by Google

his Houſe. There he called his Wife, and ſhewed me to her; but ſhe ſcreamed and ran back as Women in *England* do at the Sight of a Toad or a Spider. However, when ſhe had a while ſeen my Behaviour, and how well I obſerved the Signs her Husband made, ſhe was ſoon reconciled, and by Degrees grew extremely tender of me.

IT was about twelve at Noon, and a Servant brought in Dinner. It was only one ſubſtantial Diſh of Meat (fit for the plain Condition of an Husband-Man) in a Diſh of about four and twenty Foot Diameter. The Company were the Farmer and Wife, three Children, and an old Grandmother: When they were ſat down, the Farmer placed me at ſome Diſtance from him on the Table, which was thirty Foot high from the Floor. I was in a terrible Fright, and kept as far as I could from the Edge, for fear of falling. The Wife minced a bit of Meat, then crumbled ſome Bread on a Trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low Bow, took out my Knife and Fork, and fell to eat; which gave them exceeding Delight. The Miſtreſs ſent her Maid for a ſmall Dram-cup, which held about two Gallons; and filled it with Drink: I took up the Veſſel with much Difficulty in both Hands, and in a moſt reſpectful Manner drank to her Ladyſhip's Health, expreſſing the Words as loud as I could in *Engliſh*; which made the Company laugh ſo heartily, that I was almoſt deafened with the Noiſe. This Liquor taſted like a ſmall Cyder, and was not unpleaſant. Then the Maſter made me a Sign to come to his Trencher ſide; but as I walked on the Table, being in great Surprize all the Time, as the indulgent Reader will eaſily conceive and excuſe, I happened to ſtumble againſt a Cruſt, and fell flat on my Face, but received

Digitized by Google

ceived no Hurt. I got up immediately, and obſerving the good People to be in much Concern, I took my Hat (which I held under my Arm out of good Manners) and waving it over my Head, made three Huzza's, to ſhew I had got no Miſchief by the Fall. But advancing forwards toward my Maſter (as I ſhall henceforth call him) his youngeſt Son who ſate next him, an arch Boy of about ten Years old, took me up by the Legs, and held me ſo high in the Air, that I trembled every Limb; but his Father ſnatched me from him; and at the ſame Time gave him ſuch a Box on the Left Ear, as would have felled an *European* Troop of Horſe to the Earth; ordering him to be taken from the Table. But, being afraid the Boy might owe me a Spight, and well remembring how miſchievous all Children among us naturally are to Sparrows, Rabbits, young Kittens, and Puppy-Dogs; I fell on my Knees, and pointing to the Boy, made my Maſter underſtand, as well as I could, that I deſired his Son might be pardoned. The Father complied, and the Lad took his Seat again; whereupon I went to him and kiſſed his Hand, which my Maſter took, and made him ſtroak me gently with it.

IN the Midſt of Dinner my Miſtreſs's favourite Cat leapt into her Lap. I heard a Noiſe behind me like that of a Dozen Stocking-weavers at work; and turning my Head, I found it proceeded from the Purring of this Animal, who ſeemed to be three Times larger than an Ox, as I computed by the View of her Head and one of her Paws, while her Miſtreſs was feeding and ſtroaking her. The Fierceneſs of this Creature's Countenance altogether diſcompoſed me; although I ſtood at the further End of the Table, above fifty Foot off; and although

Digitized by Google

though my Miſtreſs held her faſt for fear ſhe might give a Spring, and ſeize me in her Talons. But, it happened there was no Danger; for the Cat took not the leaſt Notice of me when my Maſter placed me within three Yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by Experience in my Travels, that flying, or diſcovering Fear before a fierce Animal, is a certain Way to make it purſue or attack you; ſo I reſolved, in this dangerous Juncture, to ſhew no manner of Concern. I walked with Intrepidity five or ſix Times before the very Head of the Cat, and came within half a Yard of her; whereupon ſhe drew herſelf back, as if ſhe were more afraid of me: I had leſs Apprehenſion concerning the Dogs, whereof three or four came into the Room, as it is uſual in Farmers Houſes; one of which was a Maſtiff, equal in Bulk to four Elephants, and a Grey-hound ſomewhat taller than the Maſtiff, but not ſo large.

WHEN Dinner was almoſt done, the Nurſe came in with a Child of a Year old in her Arms; who immediately ſpied me, and began a Squall that you might have heard from *London-Bridge* to *Chelſea*; after the uſual Oratory of Infants, to get me for a Play-thing. The Mother out of pure Indulgence took me up, and put me towards the Child, who preſently ſeized me by the Middle, and got my Head in his Mouth, where I roared ſo loud that the Urchin was frighted, and let me drop; and I ſhould have infallibly broke my Neck, if the Mother had not held her Apron under me. The Nurſe, to quiet her Babe, made uſe of a Rattle, which was a Kind of hollow Veſſel filled with great Stones, and faſtned by a Cable to the Child's Waiſt: But all in vain, ſo that ſhe was forced to apply the laſt Remedy by giving it ſuck.

Digitized by Google

I muſt confeſs no Object ever diſguſted me ſo much as the Sight of her monſtrous Breaſt, which I cannot tell what to compare with, ſo as to give the curious Reader an Idea of its Bulk, Shape, and Colour. It ſtood prominent ſix Foot, and could not be leſs than ſixteen in Circumference. The Nipple was about half the Bigneſs of my Head, and the Hue both of that and the Dug, ſo varified with Spots, Pimples, and Freckles, that nothing could appear more nauſeous: For I had a near Sight of her, ſhe ſitting down the more conveniently to give Suck, and I ſtanding on the Table. This made me reflect upon the fair Skins of our *Engliſh* Ladies, who appear ſo beautiful to us, only becauſe they are of our own Size, and their Defects not to be ſeen, but through a magnifying Glaſs, where we find by Experiment, that the ſmootheſt and whiteſt Skins look rough and coarſe, and ill coloured.

I REMEMBER when I was at *Lilliput*, the Complexions of thoſe diminutive People appeared to me the faireſt in the World: And talking upon this Subject with a Perſon of Learning there, who was an intimate Friend of mine; he ſaid, that my Face appeared much fairer and ſmoother when he looked on me from the Ground, than it did upon a nearer View when I took him up in my Hand, and brought him cloſe; which he confeſſed was at firſt a very ſhocking Sight. He ſaid, he could diſcover great Holes in my Skin; that the Stumps of my Beard were ten Times ſtronger than the Briſtles of a Boar; and my Complexion made up of ſeveral Colours altogether diſagreeable: Although I muſt beg leave to ſay for my ſelf, that I am as fair as moſt of my Sex and Country, and very little Sunburnt by all my Travels. On the other Sides, diſcourſing of the Ladies in that Emperor's Court, he uſed

Digitized by Google

uſed to tell me, one had Freckles, another too wide a Mouth, a third too large a Noſe; nothing of which I was able to diſtinguiſh. I confeſs, this Reflection was obvious enough; which, however, I could not forbear, leſt the Reader might think thoſe vaſt Creatures were actually deformed: For I muſt do them Juſtice to ſay, they are a comely Race of People; and particularly the Features of my Maſter's Countenance, although he were but a Farmer, when I beheld him from the Height of ſixty Foot, appeared very well proportioned.

WHEN Dinner was done, my Maſter went out to his Labourers; and, as I could diſcover by his Voice and Geſture, gave his Wife a ſtrict Charge to take Care of me. I was very much tired and diſpoſed to ſleep, which my Miſtreſs perceiving, ſhe put me on her own Bed, and covered me with a clean white Handkerchief, but larger and coarſer than the Main Sail of a Man of War.

I SLEPT about two Hours, and dreamed I was at home with my Wife and Children, which aggravated my Sorrows when I waked and found myſelf alone in a vaſt Room, between two and three hundred Foot wide, and above two hundred high; lying in a Bed twenty Yards wide. My Miſtreſs was gone about her houſhold Affairs, and had locked me in. The Bed was eight Yards from the Floor. Some natural Neceſſities required me to get down: I durſt not preſume to call, and if I had, it would have been in vain, with ſuch a Voice as mine, at ſo great a Diſtance from the Room where I lay, to the Kitchen where the Family kept. While I was under theſe Circumſtances, two Rats crept up the Curtains, and ran ſmelling backwards and forwards on the Bed: One of them came up almoſt to my Face; whereupon I roſe in a Fright,

Digitized by Google

and drew out my Hanger to defend myſelf. Theſe horrible Animals had the Boldneſs to attack me on both Sides, and one of them held his Fore-feet at my Collar; but I had the good Fortune to rip up his Belly before he could do me any Miſchief. He fell down at my Feet; and the other ſeeing the Fate of his Comrade, made his Eſcape, but not without one good Wound on the Back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the Blood run trickling from him. After this Exploit, I walked gently to and fro on the Bed, to recover my Breath and Loſs of Spirits. Theſe Creatures were of the Size of a large Maſtiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce; ſo that, if I had taken off my Belt before I went to ſleep, I muſt have infallibly been torn to Pieces and devoured. I meaſured the Tail of the dead Rat, and found it to be two Yards long, wanting an Inch; but it went againſt my Stomach to drag the Carcaſs off the Bed, where it lay ſtill bleeding; I obſerved it had yet ſome Life, but with a ſtrong Slaſh croſs the Neck, I thoroughly diſpatched it.

Soon after, my Miſtreſs came into the Room, who ſeeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her Hand. I pointed to the dead *Rat*, ſmiling and making other Signs to ſhew I was not hurt; whereat ſhe was extremely rejoyced, calling the Maid to take up the dead *Rat* with a Pair of Tongs, and throw it out of the Window. Then ſhe ſet me on a Table, where I ſhewed her my Hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the Lappet of my Coat, returned it to the Scabbard. I was preſſed to do more than one Thing, which another could not do for me; and therefore endeavoured to make my Miſtreſs underſtand, that I deſired to be ſet down on the Floor; which after ſhe had done, my Baſhfulneſs

Digitized by Google

neſs would not ſuffer me to expreſs my ſelf farther than by pointing to the Door, and bowing ſeveral Times. The good Woman with much Difficulty at laſt perceived what I would be at; and taking me up again in her Hand, walked into the Garden, where ſhe ſet me down. I went on one Side about two hundred Yards; and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid my ſelf between two Leaves of Sorrel, and there diſcharged the Neceſſities of Nature.

I HOPE, the gentle Reader will excuſe me for dwelling on theſe and the like Particulars; which however inſignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar Minds, yet will certainly help a Philoſopher to enlarge his Thoughts and Imagination, and apply them to the Benefit of publick as well as private Life; which was my ſole Deſign in preſenting this, and other Accounts of my Travels to the World; wherein, I have been chiefly ſtudious of Truth, without affecting any Ornaments of Learning, or of Style. But, the whole Scene of this Voyage made ſo ſtrong an Impreſſion on my Mind, and is ſo deeply fixed in my Memory, that in committing it to Paper, I did not omit one material Circumſtance: However, upon a ſtrict Review, I blotted out ſeveral Paſſages of leſs Moment which were in my firſt Copy, for fear of being cenſured as tedious and trifling, whereof Travellers are often, perhaps, not without Juſtice, accuſed.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

A Deſcription of the Farmer's Daughter. The Author carried to a Market-Town, and then to the Metropolis. The Particulars of his Journey.

MY Miſtreſs had a Daughter of nine Years old, a Child of towardly Parts for her Age, very dextrous at her Needle, and ſkilful in dreſſing her Baby. Her Mother and ſhe contrived to fit up the Baby's Cradle for me againſt Night: The Cradle was put into a ſmall Drawer of a Cabinet, and the Drawer placed upon a hanging Shelf for fear of the *Rats*. This was my Bed all the Time I ſtayed with thoſe People, although made more convenient by Degrees, as I began to learn their Language, and make my Wants known. This young Girl was ſo handy, that after I had once or twice pulled off my Cloaths before her, ſhe was able to dreſs and undreſs me, although I never gave her that Trouble when ſhe would let me do either my ſelf. She made me ſeven Shirts, and ſome other Linnen of as fine Cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarſer than Sackcloth; and theſe ſhe conſtantly waſhed for me with her own Hands. She was likewiſe my School-Miſtreſs to teach

Digitized by Google

teach me the Language: When I pointed to any Thing, ſhe told me the Name of it in her own Tongue, ſo, that in a few Days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty Foot high, being little of her Age. She gave me the Name of *Grildrig*, which the Family took up, and afterwards the whole Kingdom. The Word imports what the *Latins* call *Nanunculus*, the *Italians Homunceletino*, and the *Engliſh Mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my Preſervation in that Country: We never parted while I was there; I called her my *Glumdalclitch*, or little Nurſe: And I ſhould be guilty of great Ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable Mention of her Care and Affection towards me, which I heartily wiſh it lay in my Power to requite as ſhe deſerves, inſtead of being the innocent, but unhappy Inſtrument of her Diſgrace, as I have too much Reaſon to fear.

IT now began to be known and talked of in the Neighbourhood, that my Maſter had found a ſtrange Animal in the Field, about the Bigneſs of a *Spalcknuck*, but exactly ſhaped in every Part like a human Creature; which it likewiſe imitated in all its Actions; ſeemed to ſpeak in a little Language of its own, had already learned ſeveral Words of theirs, went erect upon two Legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the fineſt Limbs in the World, and a Complexion fairer than a Nobleman's Daughter of three Years old. Another Farmer who lived hard by, and was a particular Friend of my Maſter, came on a Viſit, on Purpoſe, to enquire into the Truth of this Story. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a Table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my Hanger, put it up again, made

Digitized by Google

made my Reverence to my Maſter's Gueſt, aſked him in his own Language how he did, and told him he was welcome; juſt as my little Nurſe had inſtructed me. This Man, who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his Spectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily; for his Eyes appeared like the Full-Moon ſhining into a Chamber at two Windows. Our People, who diſcovered the Cauſe of my Mirth, bore me Company in Laughing; at which the old Fellow was Fool enough to be angry and out of Countenance. He had the Character of a great Miſer; and to my Misfortune he well deſerved it, by the curſed Advice he gave my Maſter to ſhew me as a Sight upon a Market Day in the next Town, which was half an Hour's riding, about two and twenty Miles from our Houſe. I gueſſed there was ſome Miſchief contriving, when I obſerved my Maſter and his Friend whiſpering long together, ſometimes pointing at me; and my Fears made me fancy, that I overheard and underſtood ſome of their Words. But, the next Morning *Glumdalclitch* my little Nurſe told me the whole Matter, which ſhe had cunningly picked out from her Mother. The poor Girl laid me on her Boſom, and fell a weeping with Shame and Grief. She apprehended ſome Miſchief would happen to me, from rude, vulgar Folks who might ſqueeze me to Death, or break one of my Limbs by taking me in their Hands. She had alſo obſerved how modeſt I was in my Nature, how nicely I regarded my Honour; and what an Indignity I ſhould conceive, to be expoſed for Money as a publick Spectacle to the meaneſt of the People. She ſaid her *Papa* and *Mamma* had promiſed that *Gildrig* ſhould be hers; but now ſhe found they meant to ſerve her as they did laſt Year, when

Digitized by Google

when they pretended to give her a Lamb; and yet, as ſoon as it was fat, ſold it to a Butcher. For my own Part, I may truly affirm, that I was leſs concerned than my Nurſe. I had a ſtrong Hope which never left me, that I ſhould one Day recover my Liberty; and as to the Ignominy of being carried about for a Monſter, I conſidered my ſelf to be a perfect Stranger in the Country; and, that ſuch a Misfortune could never be charged upon me as a Reproach if ever I ſhould return to *England*; ſince the King of *Great Britain* himſelf, in my Condition, muſt have undergone the ſame Diſtreſs.

My Maſter, purſuant to the Advice of his Friend, carried me in a Box the next Market-Day to the neighbouring Town; and took along with him his little Daughter, my Nurſe, upon a Pillion behind me. The Box was cloſe on every Side, with a little Door for me to go in and out, and a few Gimlet-holes to let in Air. The Girl had been ſo careful to put the Quilt of her Baby's Bed into it, for me to lye down on. However, I was terribly ſhaken and diſcompoſed in this Journey, although it were but of half an Hour. For the Horſe went about forty Foot at every Step; and trotted ſo high, that the Agitation was equal to the riſing and falling of a Ship in a great Storm, but much more frequent: Our Journey was ſomewhat further than from *London* to St. *Albans*. My Maſter alighted at an Inn which he uſed to frequent; and after conſulting a while with the Inn-keeper, and making ſome neceſſary Preparations, he hired the *Grultrud*, or Cryer, to give Notice through the Town, of a ſtrange Creature, to be ſeen at the Sign of the Green *Eagle*, not ſo big as a *Splacnuck*, (an Animal in that Country very finely ſhaped, about ſix Foot long) and in every Part of the Body reſembling

Digitized by Google

bling an human Creature; could ſpeak ſeveral Words, and perform an hundred diverting Tricks.

I WAS placed upon a Table in the largeſt Room of the Inn, which might be near three hundred Foot ſquare. My little Nurſe ſtood on a low Stool cloſe to the Table, to take care of me, and direct what I ſhould do. My Maſter, to avoid a Croud, would ſuffer only thirty People at a Time to ſee me. I walked about on the Table as the Girl commanded; ſhe asked me Queſtions as far as ſhe knew my Underſtanding of the Language reached, and I anſwered them as loud as I could. I turned about ſeveral Times to the Company, paid my humble Reſpects, ſaid they were welcome; and uſed ſome other Speeches I had been taught. I took up a Thimble filled with Liquor, which *Glumdalclitch* had given me for a Cup, and drank their Health. I drew out my Hanger, and flouriſhed with it after the Manner of Fencers in *England*. My Nurſe gave me Part of a Straw, which I exerciſed as a Pike, having learned the Art in my Youth. I was that Day ſhewn to twelve Sets of Company; and as often forced to go over again with the ſame Fopperies, until I was half dead with Wearineſs and Vexation. For, thoſe who had ſeen me, made ſuch wonderful Reports, that the People were ready to break down the Doors to come in. My Maſter for his own Intereſt would not ſuffer any one to touch me, except my Nurſe; and, to prevent Danger, Benches were ſet round the Table at ſuch a Diſtance, as put me out of every Body's Reach. However, an unlucky School-Boy aimed a Hazel Nut directly at my Head, which very narrowly miſſed me; otherwiſe, it came with ſo much Violence, that it would have infallibly knocked out my Brains; for it was almoſt as large as a ſmall Pumpion;

Digitized by Google

Pumpion: But I had the Satisfaction to see the young Rogue well beaten, and turned out of the Room.

MY Master gave publick Notice, that he would shew me again the next Market-Day: And, in the mean Time, he prepared a more convenient Vehicle for me, which he had Reason enough to do; for I was so tired with my first Journey, and with entertaining Company eight Hours together, that I could hardly stand upon my Legs, or speak a Word. It was at least three Days before I recovered my Strength; and that I might have no Rest at Home, all the neighbouring Gentlemen from an hundred Miles round, hearing of my Fame, came to see me at my Master's own House. There could not be fewer than thirty Persons with their Wives and Children; (for the Country is very populous;) and my Master demanded the Rate of a full Room whenever he shewed me at Home, although it were only to a single Family. So, that for some Time, I had but little Ease every Day of the Week, (except *Wednesday*, which is their Sabbath) although I were not carried to the Town.

MY Master, finding how profitable I was like to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable Cities of the Kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all Things necessary for a long Journey, and settled his Affairs at Home; he took Leave of his Wife; and upon the 17th of *August* 1703, about two Months after my Arrival, we set out for the Metropolis, situated near the Middle of that Empire, and about three thousand Miles distance from our House: My Master made his Daughter *Glumdalclitch* ride behind him. She carried me on her Lap in a Box tied about her Waist. The Girl had lined it on all Sides with the softest Cloth

Digitized by Google

Cloth ſhe could get, well quilted underneath; furniſhed it with her Baby's Bed, provided me with Linnen and other Neceſſaries; and made every Thing as convenient as ſhe could. We had no other Company but a Boy of the Houſe, who rode after us with the Luggage.

MY Maſter's Deſign was to ſhew me in all the Towns by the Way, and to ſtep out of the Road for fifty or an hundred Miles, to any Village or Perſon of Quality's Houſe, where he might expect Cuſtom. We made eaſy Journies of not above ſeven or eight Score Miles a Day: For *Glumdalclitch*, on purpoſe to ſpare me, complained ſhe was tired with the trotting of the Horſe. She often took me out of my Box at my own Deſire, to give me Air, and ſhew me the Country; but always held me faſt by Leading Strings. We paſſed over five or ſix Rivers many Degrees broader and deeper than the *Nile* or the *Ganges*; and there was hardly a Rivulet ſo ſmall as the *Thames* at *London-Bridge*. We were ten Weeks in our Journey; and I was ſhewn in eighteen large Towns, beſides many Villages and private Families.

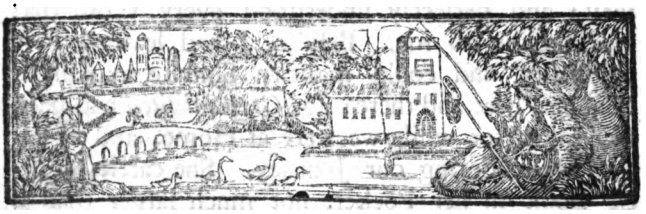
ON the 26th Day of *October*, we arrived at the Metropolis, called in their Language *Lorbrulgrud*, or *Pride of the Univerſe*. My Maſter took a Lodging in the principal Street of the City, not far from the Royal Palace; and put out Bills in the uſual Form; containing an exact Deſcription of my Perſon and Parts. He hired a large Room between three and four hundred Foot wide. He provided a Table ſixty Foot in Diameter, upon which I was to act my Part; and palliſadoed it round three Foot from the Edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was ſhewn ten Times a Day to the Wonder and Satisfaction of all People.

Digitized by Google

ple. I could now ſpeak the Language tolerably well; and perfectly underſtood every Word that was ſpoken to me. Beſides, I had learned their Alphabet, and could make a Shift to explain a Sentence here and there; for *Glumdalclitch* had been my Inſtructor while we were at Home, and at leiſure Hours during our Journey. She carried a little Book in her Pocket, not much larger than a *Sanſon*'s *Atlas*; it was a common Treatiſe for the Uſe of young Girls, giving a ſhort Account of their Religion; out of this ſhe taught me my Letters, and interpreted the Words.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google



CHAP. III.

The Author ſent for to Court. The Queen buys him of his Maſter the Farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great Scholars. An Apartment at Court provided for the Author. He is in high Favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the Honour of his own Country. His Quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf.

THE frequent Labours I underwent every Day, made in a few Weeks a very conſiderable Change in my Health: The more my Maſter got by me, the more unſatiable he grew. I had quite loſt my Stomach, and was almoſt reduced to a Skeleton. The Farmer obſerved it; and concluding I ſoon muſt die, reſolved to make as good a Hand of me as he could. While he was thus reaſoning and reſolving with himſelf; a *Slardral*, or Gentleman Uſher, came from Court, commanding my Maſter to bring me immediately thither for the Diverſion of the Queen and her Ladies. Some of the latter had already been to ſee me; and reported ſtrange Things of my

Digitized by Google

my Beauty, Behaviour, and good Senſe. Her Majeſty, and thoſe who attended her, were beyond Meaſure delighted with my Demeanor. I fell on my Knees, and begged the Honour of kiſſing her Imperial Foot; but this Gracious Princeſs held out her little Finger towards me, (after I was ſet on a Table) which I embraced in both my Arms, and put the Tip of it, with the utmoſt Reſpect, to my Lip She made me ſome general Queſtions about my Country and my Travels, which I anſwered as diſtinctly, and in as few Words as I could. She asked, whether I would be content to live at Court. I bowed down to the Board of the Table, and humbly anſwered, that I was my Maſter's Slave; but, if I were at my own Diſpoſal, I ſhould be proud to devote my Life to her Majeſty's Service. She then asked my Maſter, whether he were willing to ſell me at a good Price. He, who apprehended I could not live a Month, was ready enough to part with me; and demanded a thouſand Pieces of Gold; which were ordered him on the Spot, each Piece being about the Bigneſs of eight hundred Moydores: But, allowing for the Proportion of all Things between that Country and *Europe*, and the high Price of Gold among them; was hardly ſo great a Sum as a thouſand Guineas would be in *England*. I then ſaid to the Queen; ſince I was now her Majeſty's moſt humble Creature and Vaſſal, I muſt beg the Favour, that *Glumdalclitch*, who had always tended me with ſo much Care and Kindneſs, and underſtood to do it ſo well, might be admitted into her Service, and continue to be my Nurſe and Inſtructor. Her Majeſty agreed to my Petition; and eaſily got the Farmer's Conſent, who was glad enough to have his Daughter preferred at Court: And the poor Girl herſelf was not able

Digitized by Google

able to hide her Joy. My late Maſter withdrew, bidding me farewel, and ſaying he had left me in a good Service; to which I replyed not a Word, only making a ſlight Bow.

THE Queen obſerved my Coldneſs; and when the Farmer was gone out of the Apartment, asked me the Reaſon. I made bold to tell her Majeſty, that I owed no other Obligation to my late Maſter, than his not daſhing out the Brains of a poor harmleſs Creature found by Chance in his Field; which Obligation was amply recompenſed by the Gain he had made in ſhewing me through half the Kingdom, and the Price he had now ſold me for. That, the Life I had ſince led, was laborious enough to kill an Animal of ten Times my Strength. That, my Health was much impaired by the continual Drudgery of entertaining the Rabble every Hour of the Day; and that, if my Maſter had not thought my Life in Danger, her Majeſty would not have got ſo cheap a Bargain. But, as I was out of all Fear of being ill treated under the Protection of ſo great and good an Empreſs, the Ornament of Nature, the Darling of the World, the Delight of her Subjects, the Phœnix of the Creation; ſo, I hoped, my late Maſter's Apprehenſions would appear to be groundleſs; for I already found my Spirits to revive by the Influence of her moſt Auguſt Preſence.

THIS was the Sum of my Speech, delivered with great Improprieties and Heſitation; the latter Part was altogether framed in the Style peculiar to that People, whereof I learned ſome Phraſes from *Glumdalclitch*, while ſhe was carrying me to Court.

THE Queen giving great Allowance for my Defectiveneſs in ſpeaking, was however ſurprized at ſo much Wit and good Senſe in ſo diminutive an Animal.

Digitized by Google

Animal. She took me in her own Hand, and carried me to the King, who was then retired to his Cabinet. His Majeſty, a Prince of much Gravity, and auſtere Countenance, not well obſerving my Shape at firſt View, asked the Queen after a cold Manner, how long it was ſince ſhe grew fond of a *Splacknuck*; for ſuch it ſeems he took me to be, as I lay upon my Breaſt in her Majeſty's right Hand. But this Princeſs, who hath an infinite deal of Wit and Humour, ſet me gently on my Feet upon the Scrutore; and commanded me to give his Majeſty an Account of my ſelf, which I did in a very few Words; and *Glumdalclitch*, who attended at the Cabinet Door, and could not endure I ſhould be out of her Sight, being admitted; confirmed all that had paſſed from my Arrival at her Father's Houſe.

THE King, although he be as learned a Perſon as any in his Dominions; had been educated in the Study of Philoſophy, and particularly Mathematicks; yet, when he obſerved my Shape exactly, and ſaw me walk erect, before I began to ſpeak, conceived I might be a Piece of Clock-work, (which is in that Country arrived to a very great Perfection) contrived by ſome ingenious Artiſt. But, when he heard my Voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his Aſtoniſhment. He was by no Means ſatisfied with the Relation I gave him of the Manner I came into his Kingdom; but thought it a Story concerted between *Glumdalclitch* and her Father, who had taught me a Set of Words to make me ſell at a higher Price. Upon this Imagination he put ſeveral other Queſtions to me, and ſtill received rational Anſwers, no otherwiſe defective than by a Foreign Accent, and an imperfect

Digitized by Google

Knowledge in the Language; with ſome ruſtick Phraſes which I had learned at the Farmer's Houſe, and did not ſuit the polite Style of a Court.

HIS Majeſty ſent for three great Scholars who were then in their weekly waiting (according to the Cuſtom in that Country.) Theſe Gentlemen, after they had a while examined my Shape with much Nicety, were of different Opinions concerning me. They all agreed, that I could not be produced according to the regular Laws of Nature; becauſe I was not framed with a Capacity of preſerving my Life, either by Swiftneſs, or climbing of Trees, or digging Holes in the Earth. They obſerved by my Teeth, which they viewed with great exactneſs, that I was a carnivorous Animal; yet moſt Quadrupeds being an Over-match for me; and Field-Mice, with ſome others, too nimble, they could not imagine how I ſhould be able to ſupport my ſelf, unleſs I fed upon Snails and other Inſects; which they offered by many learned Arguments to evince, that I could not poſſibly do. One of them ſeemed to think, that I might be an Embrio, or abortive Birth. But this Opinion was rejected by the other two, who obſerved my Limbs to be perfect and finiſhed; and that I had lived ſeveral Years, as it was manifeſted from my Beard; the Stumps whereof they plainly diſcovered through a magnifying Glaſs. They would not allow me to be a Dwarf, becauſe my Littleneſs was beyond all Degrees of Compariſon; for the Queen's favourite Dwarf, the ſmalleſt ever known in that Kingdom, was near thirty Foot high. After much Debate, they concluded unanimouſly, that I was only *Relplum Scalcath*, which is interpreted literally *Lusus Naturæ*; a Determination exactly agreeable to the Modern Philoſophy of *Europe*: Whoſe Profeſſors, diſdaining

Digitized by Google

diſdaining the old Evaſion of *occult Cauſes*, whereby the Followers of *Ariſtotle* endeavour in vain to diſguiſe their Ignorance; have invented this wonderful Solution of all Difficulties, to the unſpeakable Advancement of human Knowledge.

AFTER this deciſive Concluſion, I intreated to be heard a Word or two. I applied my ſelf to the King, and aſſured his Majeſty, that I came from a Country which abounded with ſeveral Millions of both Sexes, and of my own Stature; where the Animals, Trees and Houſes, were all in Proportion, and where, by Conſequence, I might be as able to defend my ſelf, and to find Suſtenance, as any of his Majeſty's Subjects could do here; which I took for a full Anſwer to thoſe Gentlemen's Arguments. To this they only replied with a Smile of Contempt; ſaying, that the Farmer had inſtructed me very well in my Leſſon. The King, who had a much better Underſtanding, diſmiſſing his learned Men, ſent for the Farmer, who by good Fortune was not yet gone out of Town: Having therefore firſt examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young Girl; his Majeſty began to think that what we told him might poſſibly be true. He deſired the Queen to order, that a particular Care ſhould be taken of me; and was of Opinion, that *Glumdalclitch* ſhould ſtill continue in her Office of tending me, becauſe he obſerved we had a great Affection for each other. A convenient Apartment was provided for her at Court; ſhe had a ſort of Governeſs appointed to take Care of her Education, a Maid to dreſs her, and two other Servants for menial Offices; but, the Care of me was wholly appropriated to her ſelf. The Queen commanded her own Cabinet-maker to contrive a Box, that might ſerve me

Digitized by Google

for a Bed-chamber, after the Model that *Glumdalclitch* and I ſhould agree upon. This Man was a moſt ingenious Artiſt; and according to my Directions, in three Weeks finiſhed for me a wooden Chamber of ſixteen Foot Square, and twelve high; with Saſh Windows, a Door, and two Cloſets, like a *London* Bed-chamber. The Board that made the Cieling was to be lifted up and down by two Hinges, to put in a Bed ready furniſhed by her Majeſty's Upholſterer; which *Glumdalclitch* took out every Day to air, made it with her own Hands, and letting it down at Night, locked up the Roof over me. A nice Workman, who was famous for little Curioſities, undertook to make me two Chairs, with Backs and Frames, of a Subſtance not unlike Ivory; and two Tables, with a Cabinet to put my Things in. The Room was quilted on all Sides, as well as the Floor and the Cieling, to prevent any Accident from the Careleſſneſs of thoſe who carried me; and to break the Force of a Jolt when I went in a Coach. I deſired a Lock for my Door to prevent Rats and Mice from coming in: The Smith, after ſeveral Attempts, made the ſmalleſt that was ever ſeen among them; for I have known a larger at the Gate of a Gentleman's Houſe in *England*. I made a Shift to keep the Key in a Pocket of my own, fearing *Glumdalclitch* might loſe it. The Queen likewiſe ordered the thinneſt Silks that could be gotten, to make me Cloaths; not much thicker than an *Engliſh* Blanket, very cumberſome until I was accuſtomed to them. They were after the Faſhion of the Kingdom, partly reſembling the *Perſian*, and partly the *Chineſe*; and are a very grave, decent Habit.

THE Queen became ſo fond of my Company, that ſhe could not dine without me. I had a Table placed

Digitized by Google

placed upon the ſame at which her Majeſty eat, juſt at her left Elbow; and a Chair to ſit on. *Glumdalclitch* ſtood upon a Stool on the Floor, near my Table, to aſſiſt and take Care of me. I had an entire Set of Silver Diſhes and Plates, and other Neceſſaries, which in Proportion to thoſe of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have ſeen in a *London* Toy-ſhop, for the Furniture of a Baby-houſe: Theſe, my little Nurſe kept in her Pocket in a Silver Box, and gave me at Meals as I wanted them; always cleaning them her ſelf. No Perſon dined with the Queen but the two Princeſſes Royal; the elder ſixteen Years old, and the younger at that Time thirteen and a Month. Her Majeſty uſed to put a Bit of Meat upon one of my Diſhes, out of which I carved for my ſelf; and her Diverſion was to ſee me eat in Miniature. For the Queen (who had indeed but a weak Stomach) took up at one Mouthful, as much as a dozen *Engliſh* Farmers could eat at a Meal, which to me was for ſome Time a very nauſeous Sight. She would craunch the Wing of a Lark, Bones and all, between her Teeth, although it were nine Times as large as that of a full grown Turkey; and put a Bit of Bread in her Mouth, as big as two Twelvepenny Loaves. She drank out of a Golden Cup, above a Hogſhead at a Draught. Her Knives were twice as long as a Scythe ſet ſtrait upon the Handle. The Spoons, Forks, and other Inſtruments, were all in the ſame Proportion. I remember when *Glumdalclitch* carried me out of Curioſity to ſee ſome of the Tables at Court, where ten or a dozen of theſe enormous Knives and Forks were lifted up together; I thought I had never until then beheld ſo terrible a Sight.

IT is the Cuſtom, that every *Wedneſday*, (which, as

Digitized by Google

as I have before obſerved, was their Sabbath) the King and Queen, with the Royal Iſſue of both Sexes, dine together in the Apartment of his Majeſty; to whom I was now become a Favourite; and, at theſe Times my little Chair and Table were placed at his Left Hand before one of the Salt-ſellers. This Prince took a Pleaſure in converſing with me; enquiring into the Manners, Religion, Laws, Government, and Learning of *Europe*, wherein I gave him the beſt Account I was able. His Apprehenſion was ſo clear, and his Judgment ſo exact, that he made very wiſe Reflections and Obſervations upon all I ſaid. But, I confeſs, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved Country; of our Trade and Wars by Sea and Land, of our Schiſms in Religion, and Parties in the State; the Prejudices of his Education prevailed ſo far that he could not forbear taking me up in his Right Hand, and ſtroaking me gently with the other; after an hearty Fit of Laughing, asked me whether I were a *Whig* or a *Tory*. Then turning to his firſt Miniſter, who waited behind him with a white Staff, near as tall as the Main-maſt of the Royal *Sovereign*; he obſerved, how contemptible a Thing was human Grandeur, which could be mimicked by ſuch diminutive Inſects as I: And yet, ſaid he, I dare engage, thoſe Creatures have their Titles and Diſtinctions of Honour; they contrive little Neſts and Burrows, that they call Houſes and Cities; they make a Figure in Dreſs and Equipage; they love, they fight, they diſpute, they cheat, they betray, and thus he continued on, while my Colour came and went ſeveral Times, with Indignation, to hear our noble Country, the Miſtreſs of Arts and Arms, the Scourge of *France*, the Arbi-

treſs

treſs of *Europe*, the Seat of Virtue, Piety, Honour, and Truth, the Pride and Envy of the World, ſo contemptuouſly treated.

BUT, as I was not in a Condition to reſent Injuries, ſo, upon mature Thoughts, I began to doubt whether I were injured or no. For, after having been accuſtomed ſeveral Months to the Sight and Converſe of this People, and obſerved every Object upon which I caſt mine Eyes, to be of proportionable Magnitude; the Horror I had firſt conceived from their Bulk and Aſpect was ſo far worn off, that if I had then beheld a Company of *Engliſh* Lords and Ladies in their Finery and Birth-day Cloaths, acting their ſeveral Parts in the moſt courtly Manner of Strutting, and Bowing, and Prating; to ſay the Truth, I ſhould have been ſtrongly tempted to laugh as much at them, as the King and his Grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear ſmiling at my ſelf, when the Queen uſed to place me upon her Hand towards a Looking-Glaſs, by which both our Perſons appeared before me in full View together; and there could nothing be more ridiculous than the Compariſon: So, that I really began to imagine my ſelf dwindled many Degrees below my uſual Size.

NOTHING angred and mortified me ſo much as the Queen's Dwarf, who being of the loweſt Stature that was ever in that Country, (for I verily think he was not full thirty Foot high) became ſo inſolent at ſeeing a Creature ſo much beneath him, that he would always affect to ſwagger and look big as he paſſed by me in the Queen's Antichamber, while I was ſtanding on ſome Table talking with the Lords or Ladies of the Court; and he ſeldom failed of a ſmart Word or two upon my Littleneſs; againſt which, I could only revenge my ſelf

Digitized by Google

ſelf by calling him *Brother*, challenging him to wreſtle; and ſuch Repartees as are uſual in the Mouths of *Court Pages*. One Day at Dinner, this malicious little Cubb was ſo nettled with ſomething I had ſaid to him, that raiſing himſelf upon the Frame of her Majeſty's Chair, he took me up by the Middle, as I was ſitting down, not thinking any Harm, and let me drop into a large Silver Bowl of Cream; and then ran away as faſt as he could. I fell over Head and Ears, and if I had not been a good Swimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for *Glumdalclitch* in that Inſtant happened to be at the other End of the Room; and the Queen was in ſuch a Fright, that ſhe wanted Preſence of Mind to aſſiſt me. But my little Nurſe ran to my Relief; and took me out, after I had ſwallowed above a Quart of Cream. I was put to Bed; however, I received no other Damage than the Loſs of a Suit of Cloaths, which was utterly ſpoiled. The Dwarf was ſoundly whipped, and as a further Puniſhment, forced to drink up the Bowl of Cream, into which he had thrown me; neither was he ever reſtored to Favour: For, ſoon after, the Queen beſtowed him to a Lady of high Quality; ſo, that I ſaw him no more, to my very great Satisfaction; for I could not tell to what Extremity ſuch a malicious Urchin might have carried his Reſentment.

HE had before ſerved me a ſcurvy Trick, which ſet the Queen a laughing, although at the ſame Time ſhe were heartily vexed, and would have immediately caſhiered him, if I had not been ſo generous as to intercede. Her Majeſty had taken a Marrow-bone upon her Plate; and after knocking out the Marrow, placed the Bone again in the Diſh erect as it ſtood before; the Dwarf watching his

Digitized by Google

his Opportunity, while *Glumdalclitch* was gone to the Side-board, mounted the Stool that ſhe ſtood on to take Care of me at Meals; took me up in both Hands, and ſqueezing my Legs together, wedged them into the Marrow-bone above my Waiſt; where I ſtuck for ſome Time, and made a very ridiculous Figure. I believe it was near a Minute before any one knew what was become of me; for, I thought it below me to cry out. But, as Princes ſeldom get their Meat hot, my Legs were not ſcalded, only my Stockings and Breeches in a ſad Condition. The Dwarf at my Entreaty had no other Puniſhment than a ſound whipping.

I WAS frequently rallied by the Queen upon Account of my Fearfulneſs; and ſhe uſed to ask me whether the People of my Country were as great Cowards as my ſelf. The Occaſion was this. The Kingdom is much peſtered with Flies in Summer; and theſe odious Inſects, each of them as big as a *Dunſtable* Lark, hardly gave me any Reſt while I ſat at Dinner, with their continual Humming and Buzzing about mine Ears. They would ſometimes alight upon my Victuals, and leave their loathſome Excrement or Spawn behind, which to me was very viſible, although not to the Natives of that Country, whoſe large Opticks were not ſo acute as mine in viewing ſmaller Objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my Noſe or Forehead, where they ſtung me to the Quick, ſmelling very offenſively; and I could eaſily trace that viſcous Matter, which our Naturaliſts tell us enables thoſe Creatures to walk with their Feet upwards upon a Cieling. I had much ado to defend my ſelf againſt theſe deteſtable Animals, and could not forbear ſtarting when they came on my Face. It was the common Practice of the Dwarf to catch a Number of

Digitized by Google

of theſe Inſects in his Hand, as School-boys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my Noſe, on Purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My Remedy was to cut them in Pieces with my Knife as they flew in the Air; wherein my Dexterity was much admired.

I REMEMBER one Morning when *Glumdalclitch* had ſet me in my Box upon a Window, as ſhe uſually did in fair Days to give me Air, (for I durſt not venture to let the Box be hung on a Nail out of the Window, as we do with Cages in *England*) after I had lifted up one of my Saſhes, and ſat down at my Table to eat a Piece of Sweet-Cake for my Breakfaſt; above twenty Waſps, allured by the Smell, came flying into the Room, humming louder than the Drones of as many Bagpipes. Some of them ſeized my Cake, and carried it piece-meal away; others flew about my Head and Face, confounding me with the Noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt Terror of their Stings. However, I had the Courage to riſe and draw my Hanger, and attack them in the Air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and I preſently ſhut my Window. Theſe Inſects were as large as Partridges; I took out their Stings, found them an Inch and a half long, and as ſharp as Needles. I carefully preſerved them all, and having ſince ſhewn them with ſome other Curioſities in ſeveral Parts of *Europe*; upon my Return to *England* I gave three of them to *Greſham College*, and kept the fourth for my ſelf.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

The Country deſcribed. A Propoſal for correcting modern Maps. The King's Palace, and ſome Account of the Metropolis. The Author's Way of Travelling. The chief Temple deſcribed.

I Now intend to give the Reader a ſhort Deſcription of this Country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thouſand Miles round *Lorbrulgrud* the Metropolis. For, the Queen, whom I always attended, never went further when ſhe accompanied the King in his Progreſſes; and there ſtaid until his Majeſty returned from viewing his Frontiers. The whole Extent of this Prince's Dominions reached but ſix thouſand Miles in Length, and from three to five in Breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude, that our Geographers of *Europe* are in a great Error, by ſuppoſing nothing but Sea between *Japan* and *California:* For, it was ever my Opinion, that there muſt be a Balance of Earth to counterpoiſe the great Continent of *Tartary*; and therefore they ought to correct their Maps and Charts, by joining this

Digitized by Google

this vaſt Tract of Land to the North-Weſt Parts of *America*; wherein I ſhall be ready to lend them my Aſſiſtance.

THE Kingdom is a Peninſula, terminated to the North-Eaſt by a Ridge of Mountains thirty Miles high, which are altogether impaſſable by Reaſon of the Volcanoes upon the Tops. Neither do the moſt learned know what Sort of Mortals inhabit beyond thoſe Mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other Sides it is bounded by the Ocean. There is not one Sea-Port in the whole Kingdom; and thoſe Parts of the Coaſts into which the Rivers iſſue, are ſo full of pointed Rocks, and the Sea generally ſo rough, that there is no venturing with the ſmalleſt of their Boats; ſo, that theſe People are wholly excluded from any Commerce with the reſt of the World. But the large Rivers are full of Veſſels, and abound with excellent Fiſh; for they ſeldom get any from the Sea, becauſe the Sea-Fiſh are of the ſame Size with thoſe in *Europe*, and conſequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifeſt, that Nature in the Production of Plants and Animals of ſo extraordinary a Bulk, is wholly confined to this Continent; of which I leave the Reaſons to be determined by Philoſophers. However, now and then they take a Whale that happens to be daſhed againſt the Rocks, which the common People feed on heartily. Theſe Whales I have known ſo large, that a Man could hardly carry one upon his Shoulders; and ſometimes for Curioſity they are brought in Hampers to *Lorbrulgrud*: I ſaw one of them in a Diſh at the King's Table, which paſſed for a Rarity; but I did not obſerve he was fond of it; for I think indeed the Bigneſs diſguſted him, although I have ſeen one ſomewhat larger in *Greenland*.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE Country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty one Cities, near an hundred walled Towns, and a great Number of Villages. To ſatisfy my curious Reader, it may be ſufficient to deſcribe *Lorbrulgrud*. This City ſtands upon almoſt two equal Parts on each Side the River that paſſes through. It contains above eighty thouſand Houſes. It is in Length three *Glonglungs* (which make about fifty four *Engliſh* Miles) and two and a half in Breadth, as I meaſured it my ſelf in the Royal Map made by the King's Order, which was laid on the Ground on Purpoſe for me, and extended an hundred Feet; I paced the Diameter and Circumference ſeveral Times Bare-foot, and computing by the Scale, meaſured it pretty exactly.

THE King's Palace is no regular Edifice, but an Heap of Buildings about ſeven Miles round: The chief Rooms are generally two hundred and forty Foot high, and broad and long in Proportion. A Coach was allowed to *Glumdalclitch* and me, wherein her Governeſs frequently took her out to ſee the Town, or go among the Shops; and I was always of the Party, carried in my Box; although the Girl at my own Deſire, would often take me out, and hold me in her Hand, that I might more conveniently view the Houſes and the People as we paſſed along the Streets. I reckoned our Coach to be about a Square of *Weſtminſter-Hall*, but not altogether ſo high; however, I cannot be very exact. One Day the Governeſs ordered our Coach-Man to ſtop at ſeveral Shops; where the Beggars, watching their Opportunity, crouded to the Sides of the Coach, and gave me the moſt horrible Spectacles that ever an *European* Eye beheld. There was a Woman with a Cancer in her Breaſt, ſwelled to a monſtrous Size, full of Holes, in two or three

of

Digitized by Google

of which I could have eaſily crept, and covered my whole Body. There was a Fellow with a Wen in his Neck, larger than five Woolpacks; and another with a couple of wooden Legs, each about twenty Foot high. But, the moſt hateful Sight of all, was the Lice crawling on their Clothes: I could ſee diſtinctly the Limbs of theſe Vermin with my naked Eye, much better than thoſe of an *European* Louſe through a Microſcope; and their Snouts with which they rooted like Swine. They were the firſt I had ever beheld; and I ſhould have been curious enough to diſſect one of them, if I had proper Inſtruments (which I unluckily left behind me in the Ship) although indeed the Sight was ſo nauſeous, that it perfectly turned my Stomach.

BESIDE the large Box in which I was uſually carried, the Queen ordered a ſmaller one to be made for me, of about twelve Foot ſquare, and ten high, for the Convenience of travelling; becauſe the other was ſomewhat too large for *Glumdalclitch*'s Lap, and cumberſome in the Coach; it was made by the ſame Artiſt, whom I directed in the whole Contrivance. This travelling Cloſet was an exact Square, with a Window in the Middle of three of the Squares, and each Window was latticed with Iron Wire on the outſide, to prevent Accidents in long Journeys. On the fourth Side, which had no Window, two ſtrong Staples were fixed, through which, the Perſon that carried me, when I had a Mind to be on Horſeback, put in a Leathern Belt, and buckled it about his Waiſt. This was always the Office of ſome grave truſty Servant, in whom I could confide, whether I attended the King and Queen in their Progreſſes, or were diſpoſed to ſee the Gardens, or pay a Viſit to ſome great Lady or Miniſter of State in the Court, when *Glumdalclitch* happened

Digitized by Google

happened to be out of Order: For I ſoon began to be known and eſteemed among the greateſt Officers, I ſuppoſe more upon Account of their Majeſties Favour, than any Merit of my own. In Journeys, when I was weary of the Coach, a Servant on Horſeback would buckle my Box, and place it on a Cuſhion before him; and there I had a full Proſpect of the Country on three Sides from my three Windows. I had in this Cloſet a Field-Bed, and a Hammock hung from the Cieling, two Chairs and a Table, neatly ſcrewed to the Floor, to prevent being toſſed about by the Agitation of the Horſe or the Coach. And having been long uſed to Sea-Voyages, theſe Motions, although ſometimes very violent, did not much diſcompoſe me.

WHENEVER I had a Mind to ſee the Town, it was always in my Travelling-Cloſet; which *Glumdalclitch* held in her Lap, in a kind of open Sedan, after the Faſhion of the Country, born by four Men, and attended by two others in the Queen's Livery. The People who had often heard of me, were very curious to croud about the Sedan; and the Girl was complaiſant enough to make the Bearers ſtop, and to take me in her Hand, that I might be more conveniently ſeen.

I WAS very deſirous to ſee the chief Temple, and particularly the Tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the higheſt in the Kingdom. Accordingly one Day my Nurſe carried me thither, but I may truly ſay I came back diſappointed; for, the Height is not above three thouſand Foot, reckoning from the Ground to the higheſt Pinnacle Top; which allowing for the Difference between the Size of thoſe People, and us in *Europe*, is no great matter for Admiration, nor at all equal in Proportion (if I rightly remember) to *Saliſbury* Steeple. But, not

to

Digitized by Google

to detract from a Nation, to which during my Life I ſhall acknowledge myſelf extremely obliged, it muſt be allowed, that whatever this famous Tower wants in Height, is amply made up in Beauty and Strength. For, the Walls are near an hundred Foot thick, built of hewen Stone, whereof each is about forty Foot ſquare, and adorned on all Sides with Statues of Gods and Emperors, cut in Marble, larger than the Life, placed in their ſeveral Niches. I meaſured a little Finger which had fallen down from one of theſe Statues, and lay unperceived among ſome Rubbiſh; and found it exactly four Foot and an Inch in Length. *Glumdalclitch* wrapped it up in a Handkerchief, and carried it Home in her Pocket, to keep among other Trinkets, of which the Girl was very fond, as Children at her Age uſually are.

THE King's Kitchen is indeed a noble Building, vaulted at Top, and about ſix hundred Foot high. The great Oven is not ſo wide by ten Paces as the Cupola at St. *Paul*'s: For I meaſured the latter on Purpoſe after my Return. But if I ſhould deſcribe the Kitchen-Grate, the prodigious Pots and Kettles, the Joints of Meat turning on the Spits, with many other Particulars; perhaps I ſhould be hardly believed; at leaſt, a ſevere Critick would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as Travellers are often ſuſpected to do. To avoid which Cenſure, I fear I have run too much into the other Extreme; and that if this Treatiſe ſhould happen to be tranſlated into the Language of *Brobdingnag*, (which is the general Name of that Kingdom) and tranſmitted thither, the King and his People would have Reaſon to complain, that I had done them an Injury, by a falſe and diminutive Repreſentation.

HIS Majeſty ſeldom keeps above ſix hundred Horſes in his Stables: They are generally from fifty four

Digitized by Google

four to ſixty Foot high. But, when he goes abroad on ſolemn Days, he is attended for State, by a Militia Guard of five hundred Horſe, which indeed I thought was the moſt ſplendid Sight that could be ever beheld, until I ſaw part of his Army in Battalia; whereof I ſhall find another Occaſion to ſpeak.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

Several Adventures that happened to the Author. The Execution of a Criminal. The Author ſhews his Skill in Navigation.

I SHOULD have lived happy enough in that Country, if my Littleneſs had not expoſed me to ſeveral ridiculous and troubleſome Accidents; ſome of which I ſhall venture to relate. *Glumdalclitch* often carried me into the Gardens of the Court in my ſmaller Box, and would ſometimes take me out of it and hold me in her Hand, or ſet me down to walk. I remember before the Dwarf left the Queen, he followed us one Day into thoſe Gardens; and my Nurſe having ſet me down, he and I being cloſe together, near ſome Dwarf Apple-Trees, I muſt need ſhew my Wit by a ſilly Alluſion between him and the Trees, which happens to hold in their Language as it doth in ours. Whereupon, the malicious Rogue watching his Opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, ſhook it directly over my Head, by which a dozen Apples, each of them near as large as a *Briſtol* Barrel, came tumbling about my Ears;

Digitized by Google

Ears; one of them hit me on the Back as I chanced to ſtoop, and knocked me down flat on my Face, but I received no other Hurt; and the Dwarf was pardoned at my Deſire, becauſe I had given the Provocation.

ANOTHER Day, *Glumdalclitch* left me on a ſmooth Graſs-Plot to divert my ſelf while ſhe walked at ſome Diſtance with her Governeſs. In the mean Time, there ſuddenly fell ſuch a violent Shower of Hail, that I was immediately by the Force of it ſtruck to the Ground: And when I was down, the Hail-Stones gave me ſuch cruel Bangs all over my Body, as if I had been pelted with Tennis-Balls; however, I made a ſhift to creep on all four, and ſhelter my ſelf, by lying flat on my Face on the Lee-ſide of a Border of Lemmon Thyme, but ſo bruiſed from Head to Foot, that I could not go abroad in ten Days. Neither is this at all to be wondred at; becauſe Nature in that Country obſerving the ſame Proportion through all her Operations, a Hail-ſtone is near eighteen hundred Times as large as one in *Europe*; which I can aſſert upon Experience, having been ſo curious to weigh and meaſure them.

BUT, a more dangerous Accident happened to me in the ſame Garden, when my little Nurſe, believing ſhe had put me in a ſecure Place, which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own Thoughts; and having left my Box at home, to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another Part of the Gardens with her Governeſs, and ſome Ladies of her Acquaintance: While ſhe was abſent and out of hearing, a ſmall white Spaniel belonging to one of the chief Gardeners, having got by Accident into the Garden, happened to range near the Place where I lay. The Dog following

Digitized by Google

the Scent, came directly up, and taking me in his Mouth, ran ſtrait to his Maſter, wagging his Tail, and ſet me gently on the Ground. By good Fortune, he had been ſo well taught, that I was carried between his Teeth without the leaſt Hurt, or even tearing my Cloaths. But, the poor Gardener, who knew me well, and had a great Kindneſs for me, was in a terrible Fright. He gently took me up in both his Hands, and asked me how I did; but I was ſo amazed and out of Breath, that I could not ſpeak a Word. In a few Minutes I came to my ſelf, and he carried me ſafe to my little Nurſe, who by this Time had returned to the Place where ſhe left me, and was in cruel Agonies when I did not appear, nor anſwer when ſhe called; ſhe ſeverely reprimanded the Gardener on Account of his Dog. But the Thing was huſhed up, and never known at Court; for the Girl was afraid of the Queen's Anger; and truly as to my ſelf, I thought it would not be for my Reputation that ſuch a Story ſhould go about.

THIS Accident abſolutely determined *Glumdalclitch* never to truſt me abroad for the future out of her Sight. I had been long afraid of this Reſolution; and therefore concealed from her ſome little unlucky Adventures that happened in thoſe Times when I was left by my ſelf. Once a Kite hovering over the Garden, made a Stoop at me, and if I had not reſolutely drawn my Hanger, and run under a thick Eſpalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his Talons. Another Time walking to the Top of a freſh Mole-hill, I fell to my Neck in the Hole through which that Animal had caſt up the Earth; and coined ſome Lye not worth remembring, to excuſe my ſelf for ſpoiling my Cloaths. I likewiſe broke my right Shin againſt the Shell of a Snail,

Digitized by Google

Snail, which I happened to ſtumble over, as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor *England*.

I CANNOT tell whether I were more pleaſed or mortified to obſerve in thoſe ſolitary Walks, that the ſmaller Birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me; but would hop about within a Yard Diſtance, looking for Worms, and other Food, with as much Indifference and Security as if no Creature at all were near them. I remember, a Thruſh had the Confidence to ſnatch out of my Hand with his Bill, a Piece of Cake that *Glumdalclitch* had juſt given me for my Breakfaſt. When I attempted to catch any of theſe Birds, they would boldly turn againſt me, endeavouring to pick my Fingers, which I durſt not venture within their Reach; and then they would hop back unconcerned to hunt for Worms or Snails, as they did before. But, one Day I took a thick Cudgel, and threw it with all my Strength ſo luckily at a Linnet, that I knocked him down, and ſeizing him by the Neck with both my Hands, ran with him in Triumph to my Nurſe. However, the Bird, who had only been ſtunned, recovering himſelf, gave me ſo many Boxes with his Wings on both Sides of my Head and Body, although I held him at Arms Length, and was out of the Reach of his Claws, that I was twenty Times thinking to let him go. But I was ſoon relieved by one of our Servants, who wrung off the Bird's Neck; and I had him the next Day for Dinner by the Queen's Command. This Linnet, as near as I can remember, ſeemed to be ſomewhat larger than an *Engliſh* Swan.

THE Maids of Honour often invited *Glumdalclitch* to their Apartments, and deſired ſhe would bring me along with her, on Purpoſe to have the Pleaſure of ſeeing and touching me. They would often

Digitized by Google

often ſtrip me naked from Top to Toe, and lay me at full Length in their Boſoms; wherewith I was much diſguſted; becauſe to ſay the Truth, a very offenſive Smell came from their Skins; which I do not mention or intend to the Diſadvantage of thoſe excellent Ladies, for whom I have all Manner of Reſpect: But, I conceive, that my Senſe was more acute in Proportion to my Littleneſs; and that thoſe illuſtrious Perſons were no more diſagreeable to their Lovers, or to each other, than People of the ſame Quality are with us in *England*. And, after all, I found their natural Smell was much more ſupportable than when they uſed Perfumes, under which I immediately ſwooned away. I cannot forget, that an intimate Friend of mine in *Lilliput*, took the Freedom in a warm Day, when I had uſed a good deal of Exerciſe, to complain of a ſtrong Smell about me; although I am as little faulty that way as moſt of my Sex: But, I ſuppoſe, his Faculty of Smelling was as nice with regard to me, as mine was to that of this People. Upon this Point, I cannot forbear doing Juſtice to the Queen my Miſtreſs, and *Glumdalclitch* my Nurſe; whoſe Perſons were as ſweet as thoſe of any Lady in *England*.

THAT which gave me moſt Uneaſineſs among theſe Maids of Honour, when my Nurſe carried me to viſit them, was to ſee them uſe me without any Manner of Ceremony, like a Creature who had no Sort of Concupiſcence. For, they would ſtrip themſelves to the Skin, and put on their Smocks in my Preſence, while I was placed on their Toylet directly before their naked Bodies: Which, I am ſure to me was very far from being a tempting Sight, or from giving me any other Motions than thoſe of Horror and Diſguſt. Their Skins appeared

ſo

Digitized by Google

ſo coarſe and uneven, ſo variouſly coloured when I ſaw them near, with a Mole here and there as broad as a Trencher, and Hairs hanging from it thicker than Pack-threads; to ſay nothing further concerning the reſt of their Perſons. Neither did they at all ſcruple while I was by, to diſcharge what they had drunk, to the Quantity of at leaſt two Hogſheads in a Veſſel that held above three Tuns. The handſomeſt among theſe Maids of Honour, a pleaſant frolickſome Girl of ſixteen, would ſometimes ſet me aſtride upon one of her Nipples; with many other Tricks, wherein the Reader will excuſe me for not being over particular. But, I was ſo much diſpleaſed, that I intreated *Glumdalclitch* to contrive ſome Excuſe for not ſeeing that young Lady any more.

ONE Day, a young Gentleman, who was Nephew to my Nurſe's Governeſs, came and preſſed them both to ſee an Execution. It was of a Man who had murdered one of that Gentleman's intimate Acquaintance. *Glumdalclitch* was prevailed on to be of the Company, very much againſt her Inclination, for ſhe was naturally tender hearted: And as for my ſelf, although I abhorred ſuch Kind of Spectacles; yet, my Curioſity tempted me to ſee ſomething that I thought muſt be extraordinary. The Malefactor was fixed in a Chair upon a Scaffold erected for the Purpoſe; and his Head cut off at one Blow with a Sword of about forty Foot long. The Veins and Arteries ſpouted up ſuch a prodigious Quantity of Blood, and ſo high in the Air, that the great *Jet d'Eau* at *Verſailles* was not equal for the Time it laſted; and the Head when it fell on the Scaffold Floor, gave ſuch a Bounce, as made me ſtart, although I were at leaſt an *Engliſh* Mile diſtant.

THE

THE Queen, who often uſed to hear me talk of my Sea-Voyages, and took all Occaſions to divert me when I was melancholy, asked me, whether I underſtood how to handle a Sail or an Oar; and whether a little Exerciſe of Rowing might not be convenient for my Health. I anſwered, that I underſtood both very well. For, although my proper Employment had been to be Surgeon or Doctor to the Ship; yet often upon a Pinch, I was forced to work like a common Mariner. But, I could not ſee how this could be done in their Country, where the ſmalleſt Wherry was equal to a firſt Rate Man of War among us; and ſuch a Boat as I could manage, would never live in any of their Rivers: Her Majeſty ſaid, if I would contrive a Boat, her own Joyner ſhould make it, and ſhe would provide a Place for me to ſail in. The Fellow was an ingenious Workman, and by my Inſtructions, in ten Days finiſhed a Pleaſure-Boat with all its Tackling, able conveniently to hold eight *Europeans*. When it was finiſhed, the Queen was ſo delighted, that ſhe ran with it in her Lap to the King, who ordered it to be put in a Ciſtern full of Water, with me in it, by Way of Tryal; where I could not manage my two Sculls or little Oars for want of Room. But, the Queen had before contrived another Project. She ordered the Joyner to make a wooden Trough of three hundred Foot long, fifty broad and eight deep; which being well pitched to prevent leaking, was placed on the Floor along the Wall in an outer Room of the Palace. It had a Cock near the Bottom, to let out the Water when it began to grow ſtale; and two Servants could eaſily fill it in half an Hour. Here I often uſed to row for my Diverſion, as well as that of the Queen and her Ladies, who thought themſelves agreeably entertained

entertained with my Skill and Agility. Sometimes I would put up my Sail, and then my Buſineſs was only to ſteer, while the Ladies gave me a Gale with their Fans; and when they were weary, ſome of the Pages would blow my Sail forward with their Breath, while I ſhewed my Art by ſteering Starboard or Larboard as I pleaſed. When I had done, *Glumdalclitch* always carried back my Boat into her Cloſet, and hung it on a Nail to dry.

IN this Exerciſe I once met an Accident which had like to have coſt me my Life. For, one of the Pages having put my Boat into the Trough; the Governeſs who attended *Glumdalclitch*, very officiouſly lifted me up to place me in the Boat; but I happened to ſlip through her Fingers, and ſhould have infallibly fallen down forty Foot upon the Floor, if by the luckieſt Chance in the World, I had not been ſtopped by a Corking-pin that ſtuck in the good Gentlewoman's Stomacher; the Head of the Pin paſſed between my Shirt and the Waiſt-band of my Breeches; and thus I was held by the Middle in the Air, until *Glumdalclitch* ran to my Relief.

ANOTHER Time, one of the Servants, whoſe Office it was to fill my Trough every third Day with freſh Water; was ſo careleſs to let a huge Frog (not perceiving it) ſlip out of his Pail. The Frog lay concealed until I was put into my Boat, but then ſeeing a reſting Place, climbed up, and made it lean ſo much on one Side, that I was forced to balance it with all my Weight on the other, to prevent overturning. When the Frog was got in, it hopped at once half the Length of the Boat, and then over my Head, backwards and forwards, dawbing my Face and Cloaths with its odious Slime. The Largeneſs of its Features made it appear the moſt

Digitized by Google

moſt deformed Animal that can be conceived. However, I deſired *Glumdalclitch* to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my Sculls, and at laſt forced it to leap out of the Boat.

BUT, the greateſt Danger I ever underwent in that Kingdom, was from a Monkey, who belonged to one of the Clerks of the Kitchen. *Glumdalclitch* had locked me up in her Cloſet, while ſhe went ſomewhere upon Buſineſs, or a Viſit. The Weather being very warm, the Cloſet Window was left open, as well as the Windows and the Door of my bigger Box, in which I uſually lived, becauſe of its Largeneſs and Conveniency. As I ſat quietly meditating at my Table, I heard ſomething bounce in at the Cloſet Window, and skip about from one Side to the other; whereat, although I were much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but not ſtirring from my Seat; and then I ſaw this frolickſome Animal, frisking and leaping up and down, until at laſt he came to my Box, which he ſeemed to view with great Pleaſure and Curioſity, peeping in at the Door and every Window. I retreated to the farther Corner of my Room, or Box; but the Monkey looking in at every Side, put me into ſuch a Fright, that I wanted Preſence of Mind to conceal my ſelf under the Bed, as I might eaſily have done. After ſome Time ſpent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at laſt eſpyed me; and reaching one of his Paws in at the Door, as a Cat doth when ſhe plays with a Mouſe, although I often ſhifted Place to avoid him; he at Length ſeized the Lappet of my Coat (which being made of that Country Silk, was very thick and ſtrong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right Fore-foot, and held me

me as a Nurſe doth a Child ſhe is going to ſuckle; juſt as I have ſeen the ſame Sort of Creature do with a Kitten in *Europe:* And, when I offered to ſtruggle, he ſqueezed me ſo hard, that I thought it more prudent to ſubmit. I have good Reaſon to believe, that he took me for a young one of his own Species, by his often ſtroaking my Face very gently with his other Paw. In theſe Diverſions he was interrupted by a Noiſe at the Cloſet Door, as if ſome Body were opening it; whereupon he ſuddenly leaped up to the Window at which he had come in, and thence upon the Leads and Gutters, walking upon three Legs, and holding me in the fourth, until he clambered up to a Roof that was next to ours. I heard *Glumdalclitch* giving a Shriek at the Moment he was carrying me out. The poor Girl was almoſt diſtracted: That Quarter of the Palace was all in an Uproar; the Servants ran for Ladders; the Monkey was ſeen by hundreds in the Court, ſitting upon the Ridge of a Building, holding me like a Baby in one of his Fore-Paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my Mouth ſome Victuals he had ſqueezed out of the Bag on one Side of his Chaps, and patting me when I would not eat; whereat, many of the Rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they juſtly ought to be blamed; for without Queſtion, the Sight was ridiculous enough to every Body but my ſelf. Some of the People threw up Stones, hoping to drive the Monkey down; but this was ſtrictly forbidden, or elſe very probably my Brains had been daſhed out.

THE Ladders were now applied, and mounted by ſeveral Men; which the Monkey obſerving, and finding himſelf almoſt encompaſſed; not being able to make Speed enough with his three Legs, let

Digitized by Google

let me drop on a Ridge-Tyle, and made his Eſcape. Here I ſat for ſome Time, five hundred Yards from the Ground, expecting every Moment to be blown down by the Wind, or to fall by my own Giddineſs, and come tumbling over and over from the Ridge to the Eves. But, an honeſt Lad, one of my Nurſe's Footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his Breeches Pocket, brought be down ſafe.

I WAS almoſt choaked with the filthy Stuff the Monkey had crammed down my Throat; but, my dear little Nurſe picked it out of my Mouth with a ſmall Needle; and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great Relief. Yet I was ſo weak and bruiſed in the Sides with the Squeezes given me by this odious Animal, that I was forced to keep my Bed a Fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the Court, ſent every Day to enquire after my Health; and her Majeſty made me ſeveral Viſits during my Sickneſs. The Monkey was killed, and an Order made, that no ſuch Animal ſhould be kept about the Palace.

WHEN I attended the King after my Recovery, to return him Thanks for his Favours, he was pleaſed to railly me a good deal upon this Adventure. He asked me what my Thoughts and Speculations were while I lay in the Monkey's Paw; how I liked the Victuals he gave me, his Manner of Feeding; and whether the freſh Air on the Roof had ſharpened my Stomach. He deſired to know, what I would have done upon ſuch an Occaſion in my own Country. I told his Majeſty, that in *Europe* we had no Monkies, except ſuch as were brought for Curioſities from other Places, and ſo ſmall, that I could deal with a Dozen of them together, if they preſumed to attack me. And as for

Digitized by Google

for that monſtrous Animal with whom I was ſo lately engaged, (it was indeed as large as an Elephant) if my Fears had ſuffered me to think ſo far as to make Uſe of my Hanger (looking fiercely, and clapping my Hand upon the Hilt as I ſpoke) when he poked his Paw into my Chamber, perhaps I ſhould have given him ſuch a Wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more Haſte than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm Tone, like a Perſon who was jealous leſt his Courage ſhould be called in Queſtion. However, my Speech produced nothing elſe beſides a loud Laughter; which all the Reſpect due to his Majeſty from thoſe about him, could not make them contain. This made me reflect, how vain an Attempt it is for a Man to endeavour doing himſelf Honour among thoſe who are out of all Degree of Equality or Compariſon with him. And yet, I have ſeen the Moral of my own Behaviour very frequent in *England* ſince my Return; where a little contemptible Varlet, without the leaſt Title to Birth, Perſon, Wit, or common Senſe, ſhall preſume to look with Importance, and put himſelf upon a Foot with the greateſt Perſons of the Kingdom.

I WAS every Day furniſhing the Court with ſome ridiculous Story; and *Glumdalclitch*, although ſhe loved me to Exceſs, yet was arch enough to inform the Queen, whenever I committed any Folly that ſhe thought would be diverting to her Majeſty. The Girl who had been out of Order, was carried by her Governeſs to take the Air about an Hour's Diſtance, or thirty Miles from Town. They alighted out of the Coach near a ſmall Foot-path in a Field; and *Glumdalclitch* ſetting down my travelling Box, I went out of it to walk. There was

Digitized by Google

a Cow-dung in the Path, and I muſt needs try my Activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a Run, but unfortunately jumped ſhort, and found my ſelf juſt in the Middle up to my Knees. I waded through with ſome Difficulty, and one of the Footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his Handkerchief; for I was filthily bemired, and my Nurſe confined me to my Box until we returned home; where the Queen was ſoon informed of what had paſſed, and the Footmen ſpread it about the Court; ſo, that all the Mirth, for ſome Days, was at my Expence.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

Several Contrivances of the Author to pleaſe the King and Queen. He ſhews his Skill in Muſick. The King enquires into the State of EUROPE, *which the Author relates to him. The King's Obſervations thereon.*

I USED to attend the King's Levee once or twice a Week, and had often ſeen him under the Barber's Hand, which indeed was at firſt very terrible to behold. For, the Razor was almoſt twice as long as an ordinary Scythe. His Majeſty, according to the Cuſtom of the Country, was only ſhaved twice a Week. I once prevailed on the Barber, to give me ſome of the Suds or Lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the ſtrongeſt Stumps of Hair. I then took a Piece of fine Wood, and cut it like the Back of a Comb, making ſeveral Holes in it at equal Diſtance, with as ſmall a Needle as I could get from *Glumdalclitch*. I fixed in the Stumps ſo artificially, ſcraping and ſloping

Digitized by Google

ſloping them with my Knife towards the Points, that I made a very tolerable Comb; which was a ſeaſonable Supply, my own being ſo much broken in the Teeth, that it was almoſt uſeleſs: Neither did I know any Artiſt in that Country ſo nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

AND this puts me in Mind of an Amuſement wherein I ſpent many of my leiſure Hours. I deſired the Queen's Woman to ſave for me the Combings of her Majeſty's Hair, whereof in Time I got a good Quantity; and conſulting with my Friend the Cabinet-maker, who had received general Orders to do little Jobbs for me; I directed him to make two Chair-frames, no larger than thoſe I had in my Box, and then to bore little Holes with a fine Awl round thoſe Parts where I deſigned the Backs and Seats; through theſe Holes I wove the ſtrongeſt Hairs I could pick out, juſt after the Manner of Cane-chairs in *England*. When they were finiſhed, I made a Preſent of them to her Majeſty, who kept them in her Cabinet, and uſed to ſhew them for Curioſities; as indeed they were the Wonder of every one who beheld them. The Queen would have had me ſit upon one of theſe Chairs, but I abſolutely refuſed to obey her; proteſting I would rather dye a thouſand Deaths, than place a diſhonourable Part of my Body on thoſe precious Hairs that once adorned her Majeſty's Head. Of theſe Hairs (as I had always a Mechanical Genius) I likewiſe made a neat little Purſe about five Foot long, with her Majeſty's Name decyphered in Gold Letters; which I gave to *Glumdalclitch*, by the Queen's Conſent. To ſay the Truth, it was more for Shew than Uſe, being not of Strength to bear the Weight of the larger Coins; and

Digitized by Google

and therefore she kept nothing in it, but some little Toys that Girls are fond of.

THE King, who delighted in Musick, had frequent Concerts at Court, to which I was sometimes carried, and set in my Box on a Table to hear them: But, the Noise was so great, that I could hardly distinguish the Tunes. I am confident, that all the Drums and Trumpets of a Royal Army, beating and sounding together just at your Ears, could not equal it. My Practice was to have my Box removed from the Places where the Performers sat, as far as I could; then to shut the Doors and Windows of it, and draw the Window-Curtains; after which I found their Musick not disagreeable.

I HAD learned in my Youth, to play a little upon the Spinet; *Glumdalclitch* kept one in her Chamber, and a Master attended twice a Week to teach her: I call it a Spinet, because it somewhat resembled that Instrument, and was played upon in the same Manner. A Fancy came into my Head, that I could entertain the King and Queen with an *English* Tune upon this Instrument. But this appeared extremely difficult: For, the Spinet was near sixty Foot long, each Key being almost a Foot wide; so that, with my Arms extended, I could not reach to above five Keys; and to press them down, required a good smart Stroak with my Fist, which would be too great a Labour, and to no Purpose. The Method I contrived was this. I prepared two round Sticks about the Bigness of common Cudgels; they were thicker at one End than the other; and I covered the thicker End with a Piece of a Mouse's Skin, that by rapping on them, I might neither Damage the Tops of the Keys, nor interrupt the Sound. Before the Spinet,

Digitized by Google

a Bench was placed about four Foot below the Keys, and I was put upon the Bench. I ran ſideling upon it that Way and this, as faſt as I could, banging the proper Keys with my two Sticks; and made a Shift to play a Jigg to the great Satisfaction of both their Majeſties: But, it was the moſt violent Exerciſe I ever underwent, and yet I could not ſtrike above ſixteen Keys, nor, conſequently, play the Baſs and Treble together, as other Artiſts do; which was a great Diſadvantage to my Performance.

THE King, who, as I before obſerved, was a Prince of excellent Underſtanding, would frequently order, that I ſhould be brought in my Box, and ſet upon the Table in his Cloſet. He would then command me to bring one of my Chairs out of the Box, and ſit down within three Yards Diſtance, upon the Top of the Cabinet; which brought me almoſt to a Level with his Face. In this Manner I had ſeveral Converſations with him. I one Day took the freedom to tell his Majeſty, that the Contempt he diſcovered towards *Europe*, and the reſt of the World, did not ſeem anſwerable to thoſe excellent Qualities of Mind that he was Maſter of. That, Reaſon did not extend itſelf with the Bulk of the Body: On the contrary, we obſerved in our Country, that the talleſt Perſons were uſually leaſt provided with it. That, among other Animals, Bees and Ants had the Reputation of more Induſtry, Art, and Sagacity, than many of the larger Kinds. And that, as inconſiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majeſty ſome ſignal Service. The King heard me with Attention; and began to conceive a much better Opinion of me, than he had ever before. He deſired I would give him as exact an Account of the Govern-

ment

Digitized by Google

ment of *England* as I poſſibly could; becauſe, as fond as Princes commonly are of their own Cuſtoms (for ſo he conjectured of other Monarchs by my former Diſcourſes) he ſhould be glad to hear of any Thing that might deſerve Imitation.

IMAGINE with thy ſelf, courteous Reader, how often I then wiſhed for the Tongue of *Demoſthenes* or *Cicero*, that might have enabled me to celebrate the Praiſe of my own dear native Country, in a Style equal to its Merits and Felicity.

I BEGAN my Diſcourſe by informing his Majeſty, that our Dominions conſiſted of two Iſlands, which compoſed three mighty Kingdoms under one Sovereign, beſides our Plantations in *America*. I dwelt long upon the Fertility of our Soil, and the Temperature of our Climate. I then ſpoke at large upon the Conſtitution of an *Engliſh* Parliament, partly made up of an illuſtrious Body called the Houſe of Peers, Perſons of the nobleſt Blood, and of the moſt ancient and ample Patrimonies. I deſcribed that extraordinary Care always taken of their Education in Arts and Arms, to qualify them for being Counſellors born to the King and Kingdom; to have a Share in the Legiſlature, to be Members of the higheſt Court of Judicature, from whence there could be no Appeal; and to be Champions always ready for the Defence of their Prince and Country by their Valour, Conduct and Fidelity. That, theſe were the Ornament and Bulwark of the Kingdom; worthy Followers of their moſt renowned Anceſtors, whoſe Honour had been the Reward of their Virtue; from which their Poſterity were never once known to degenerate. To theſe were joined ſeveral holy Perſons, as part of that Aſſembly, under the Title of Biſhops; whoſe peculiar Buſineſs it is, to take Care of Religion, and

Digitized by Google

of thoſe who inſtruct the People therein. Theſe were ſearched and ſought out through the whole Nation, by the Prince and wiſeſt Counſellors, among ſuch of the Prieſthood, as were moſt deſervedly diſtinguiſhed by the Sanctity of their Lives, and the Depth of their Erudition; who were indeed, the ſpiritual Fathers of the Clergy and the People.

THAT, the other Part of the Parliament conſiſted of an Aſſembly called the Houſe of Commons; who were all principal Gentlemen, *freely* picked and culled out by the People themſelves, for their great Abilities, and Love of their Country, to repreſent the Wiſdom of the whole Nation. And, theſe two Bodies make up the moſt auguſt Aſſembly in *Europe*; to whom, in Conjunction with the Prince, the whole Legiſlature is committed.

I THEN deſcended to the Courts of Juſtice, over which the Judges, thoſe venerable Sages and Interpreters of the Law, preſided, for determining the diſputed Rights and Properties of Men, as well as for the Puniſhment of Vice, and Protection of Innocence. I mentioned the prudent Management of our Treaſury; the Valour and Atchievements of our Forces by Sea and Land. I computed the Number of our People, by reckoning how many Millions there might be of each religious Sect, or Political Party among us. I did not omit even our Sports and Paſtimes, or any other Particular which I thought might redound to the Honour of my Country. And, I finiſhed all with a brief hiſtorical Account of Affairs and Events in *England* for about an hundred Years paſt.

THIS Converſation was not ended under five Audiences, each of ſeveral Hours; and the King heard the whole with great Attention; frequently taking

Digitized by Google

taking Notes of what I ſpoke, as well as Memorandums of what Queſtions he intended to ask me.

WHEN I had put an End to theſe long Diſcourſes, his Majeſty in a ſixth Audience conſulting his Notes, propoſed many Doubts, Queries, and Objections upon every Article. He asked, what Methods were uſed to cultivate the Minds and Bodies of our young Nobility; and in what Kind of Buſineſs they commonly ſpent the firſt and teachable Part of their Lives. What Courſe was taken to ſupply that Aſſembly, when any noble Family became extinct. What Qualifications were neceſſary in thoſe who were to be created new Lords: Whether the Humour of the Prince, a Sum of Money to a Court-Lady, or a Prime-Miniſter; or a Deſign of ſtrengthening a Party oppoſite to the publick Intereſt, ever happened to be Motives in thoſe Advancements. What ſhare of Knowledge theſe Lords had in the Laws of their Country, and how they came by it, ſo as to enable them to decide the Properties of their Fellow-Subjects in the laſt Reſort. Whether they were always ſo free from Avarice and Partialities, or Want; that a Bribe, or ſome other ſiniſter View, could have no Place among them. Whether thoſe holy Lords I ſpoke of, were conſtantly promoted to that Rank upon Account of their Knowledge in religious Matters, and the Sanctity of their Lives, had never been Compliers with the Times, while they were common Prieſts; or ſlaviſh proſtitute Chaplains to ſome Nobleman, whoſe Opinions they continued ſervilely to follow after they were admitted into that Aſſembly.

HE then deſired to know, what Arts were practiſed in electing thoſe whom I called Commoners. Whether,

Digitized by Google

Whether, a Stranger with a ſtrong Purſe, might not influence the vulgar Voters to chuſe him before their own Landlords, or the moſt conſiderable Gentleman in the Neighbourhood. How it came to paſs, that People were ſo violently bent upon getting into this Aſſembly, which I allowed to be a great Trouble and Expence, often to the Ruin of their Families, without any Salary or Penſion: Becauſe this appeared ſuch an exalted Strain of Virtue and publick Spirit, that his Majeſty ſeemed to doubt it might poſſibly not be always ſincere: And, he deſired to know, whether ſuch zealous Gentlemen could have any Views of refunding themſelves for the Charges and Trouble they were at, by ſacrificing the publick Good, to the Deſigns of a weak and vicious Prince, in Conjunction with a corrupted Miniſtry. He multiplied his Queſtions, and ſifted me thoroughly upon every Part of this Head; propoſing numberleſs Enquiries and Objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

UPON what I ſaid, in relation to our Courts of Juſtice, his Majeſty deſired to be ſatisfied in ſeveral Points: And, this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almoſt ruined by a long Suit in Chancery, which was decreed for me with Coſts. He asked, what Time was uſually ſpent in determining between Right and Wrong; and what Degree of Expence. Whether Advocates and Orators had Liberty to plead in Cauſes manifeſtly known to be unjuſt, vexatious, or oppreſſive. Whether Party in Religion or Politicks were obſerved to be of any Weight in the Scale of Juſtice. Whether thoſe pleading Orators were Perſons educated in the general Knowledge of Equity;

Digitized by Google

quity; or only in provincial, national, and other local Cuſtoms. Whether they, or their Judges, had any Part in penning thoſe Laws which they aſſumed the Liberty of interpreting and gloſſing upon at their Pleaſure. Whether they had ever at different Times pleaded for and againſt the ſame Cauſe, and cited Precedents to prove contrary Opinions. Whether they were a rich or a poor Corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary Reward for pleading or delivering their Opinions. And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as Members in the lower Senate.

HE fell next upon the Management of our Treaſury; and ſaid, he thought my Memory had failed me, becauſe I computed our Taxes at about five or ſix Millions a Year; and when I came to mention the Iſſues, he found they ſometimes amounted to more than double; for, the Notes he had taken were very particular in this Point; becauſe he hoped, as he told me, that the Knowledge of our Conduct might be uſeful to him; and he could not be deceived in his Calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was ſtill at a Loſs how a Kingdom could run out of its Eſtate like a private Perſon. He asked me, who were our Creditors? and, where we found Money to pay them? He wondered to hear me talk of ſuch chargeable and extenſive Wars; that, certainly we muſt be a quarrelſome People, or live among very bad Neighbours; and that our Generals muſt needs be richer than our Kings. He asked, what Buſineſs we had out of our own Iſlands, unleſs upon the Score of Trade or Treaty, or to defend the Coaſts with our Fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a Mercenary ſtanding Army in the Midſt of Peace,

Digitized by Google

Peace, and among a free People. He ſaid, if we were governed by our own Conſent in the Perſons of our Repreſentatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or againſt whom we were to fight; and would hear my Opinion, whether a private Man's Houſe might not better be defended by himſelf, his Children, and Family; than by half a dozen Raſcals picked up at a Venture in the Streets, for ſmall Wages, who might get an hundred Times more by cutting their Throats.

HE laughed at my odd Kind of Arithmetick (as he was pleaſed to call it) in reckoning the Numbers of our People by a Computation drawn from the ſeveral Sects among us in Religion and Politicks. He ſaid, he knew no Reaſon, why thoſe who entertain Opinions prejudicial to the Publick, ſhould be obliged to change, or ſhould not be obliged to conceal them. And, as it was Tyranny in any Government to require the firſt, ſo it was Weakneſs not to enforce the ſecond: For, a Man may be allowed to keep Poiſons in his Cloſet, but not to vend them about as Cordials.

HE obſerved, that among the Diverſions of our Nobility and Gentry, I had mentioned Gaming. He deſired to know at what Age this Entertainment was uſually taken up, and when it was laid down. How much of their Time it employed; whether it ever went ſo high as to affect their Fortunes. Whether mean vicious People, by their Dexterity in that Art, might not arrive at great Riches, and ſometimes keep our very Nobles in Dependance, as well as habituate them to vile Companions; wholly take them from the Improvement of their Minds, and force them by the Loſſes they received,

Digitized by Google

received, to learn and practiſe that infamous Dexterity upon others.

HE was perfectly aſtoniſhed with the hiſtorical Account I gave him of our Affairs during the laſt Century; proteſting it was only a Heap of Conſpiracies, Rebellions, Murders, Maſſacres, Revolutions, Baniſhments; the very worſt Effects that Avarice, Faction, Hypocriſy, Perfidiouſneſs, Cruelty, Rage, Madneſs, Hatred, Envy, Luſt, Malice, and Ambition could produce.

HIS Majeſty, in another Audience, was at the Pains to recapitulate the Sum of all I had ſpoken; compared the Queſtions he made, with the Anſwers I had given; then taking me into his Hands, and ſtroaking me gently, delivered himſelf in theſe Words, which I ſhall never forget, nor the Manner he ſpoke them in. My little Friend *Grildrig*; you have made a moſt admirable Panegyrick upon your Country. You have clearly proved that Ignorance, Idleneſs, and Vice, are the proper Ingredients for qualifying a Legiſlator. That Laws are beſt explained, interpreted, and applied by thoſe whoſe Intereſt and Abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I obſerve among you, ſome Lines of an Inſtitution, which in its Original might have been tolerable; but theſe half eraſed, and the reſt wholly blurred and blotted by Corruptions. It doth not appear, from all you have ſaid, how any one Perfection is required towards the Procurement of any one Station among you; much leſs that Men are ennobled on Account of their Virtue, that Prieſts are advanced for their Piety or Learning, Soldiers for their Conduct or Valour, Judges for their Integrity, Senators for the Love of their Country, or Counſellors for their Wiſdom. As for yourſelf (continued the King) who

Digitized by Google

who have ſpent the greateſt Part of your Life in travelling; I am well diſpoſed to hope you may hitherto have eſcaped many Vices of your Country. But, by what I have gathered from your own Relation, and the Anſwers I have with much Pains wringed and extorted from you; I cannot but conclude the Bulk of your Natives, to be the moſt pernicious Race of little odious Vermin that Nature ever ſuffered to crawl upon the Surface of the Earth.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

The Author's Love of his Country. He makes a Propoſal of much Advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great Ignorance in Politicks. The Learning of that Country very imperfect and confined. Their Laws, and Military Affairs, and Parties in the State.

NOTHING but an extreme Love of Truth, could have hindered me from concealing this Part of my Story. It was in vain to diſcover my Reſentments, which were always turned into Ridicule: And, I was forced to reſt with Patience, while my noble and moſt beloved Country was ſo injuriouſly treated. I am heartily ſorry as any of my Readers can poſſibly be, that ſuch an Occaſion was given: But this Prince happened to be ſo curious and inquiſitive into every Particular, that it could not conſiſt either with Gratitude or good Manners to refuſe giving him what Satisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to ſay in my own Vindication; that I artfully eluded many of his Queſtions; and gave to every Point a more favourable

Digitized by Google

able Turn by many Degrees than the ſtrictneſs of Truth would allow. For, I have always born that laudable Partiality to my own Country, which *Dionyſius Hallicarnaſſenſis* with ſo much Juſtice recommends to an Hiſtorian. I would hide the Frailties and Deformities of my Political Mother, and place her Virtues and Beauties in the moſt advantageous Light. This was my ſincere Endeavour in thoſe many Diſcourſes I had with that Monarch, although it unfortunately failed of Succeſs.

BUT, great Allowances ſhould be given to a King who lives wholly ſecluded from the reſt of the World, and muſt therefore be altogether unacquainted with the Manners and Cuſtoms that moſt prevail in other Nations: The want of which Knowledge, will ever produce many *Prejudices*, and a certain *Narrowneſs of Thinking*; from which we, and the politer Countries of *Europe*, are wholly exempted. And, it would be hard indeed, if ſo remote a Prince's Notions of Virtue and Vice were to be offered as a Standard for all Mankind.

To confirm what I have now ſaid, and further to ſhew the miſerable Effects of a *confined Education*; I ſhall here inſert a Paſſage which will hardly obtain Belief. In Hopes to ingratiate my ſelf farther into his Majeſty's Favour, I told him of an Invention diſcovered between three and four hundred Years ago, to make a certain Powder; into an Heap of which the ſmalleſt Spark of Fire falling, would kindle the whole in a Moment, although it were as big as a Mountain; and make it all fly up in the Air together, with a Noiſe and Agitation greater than Thunder. That, a proper Quantity of this Powder rammed into a hollow Tube of Braſs or Iron, according to its Bigneſs, would drive a Ball of Iron or Lead with ſuch Violence and Speed, as nothing

nothing was able to ſuſtain its Force. That, the largeſt Balls thus diſcharged, would not only deſtroy whole Ranks of an Army at once; but batter the ſtrongeſt Walls to the Ground; ſink down Ships with a thouſand Men in each, to the Bottom of the Sea; and when linked together by a Chain, would cut through Maſts and Rigging; divide hundreds of Bodies in the Middle, and lay all Waſte before them. That, we often put this Powder into large hollow Balls of Iron, and diſcharged them by an Engine into ſome City we were beſieging; which would rip up the Pavement, tear the Houſes to Pieces, burſt and throw Splinters on every Side, daſhing out the Brains of all who came near. That, I knew the Ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I underſtood the Manner of compounding them, and could direct his Workmen how to make thoſe Tubes of a Size proportionable to all other Things in his Majeſty's Kingdom; and the largeſt need not be above two hundred Foot long; twenty or thirty of which Tubes, charged with the proper Quantity of Powder and Balls, would batter down the Walls of the ſtrongeſt Town in his Dominions in a few Hours; or deſtroy the whole Metropolis, if ever it ſhould pretend to diſpute his abſolute Commands. This, I humbly offered to his Majeſty, as a ſmall Tribute of Acknowledgment, in Return of ſo many Marks that I had received of his Royal Favour and Protection.

THE King was ſtruck with Horror at the Deſcription I had given of thoſe terrible Engines, and the Propoſal I had made. He was amazed how ſo impotent and grovelling an Inſect as I (theſe were his Expreſſions) could entertain ſuch inhuman Ideas, and in ſo familiar a Manner as to appear wholly unmoved at all the Scenes of Blood and Deſolation, which

Digitized by Google

which I had painted as the common Effects of thoſe deſtructive Machines; whereof he ſaid, ſome evil Genius, Enemy to Mankind, muſt have been the firſt Contriver. As for himſelf, he proteſted, that although few Things delighted him ſo much as new Diſcoveries in Art or in Nature; yet he would rather loſe Half his Kingdom, than be privy to ſuch a Secret; which he commanded me, as I valued my Life, never to mention any more.

A STRANGE Effect of *narrow Principles* and *ſhort Views!* that a Prince poſſeſſed of every Quality which procures Veneration, Love and Eſteem; of ſtrong Parts, great Wiſdom and profound Learning; endued with admirable Talents for Government, and almoſt adored by his Subjects; ſhould from a *nice unneceſſary Scruple*, whereof in *Europe* we can have no Conception, let ſlip an Opportunity put into his Hands, that would have made him abſolute Maſter of the Lives, the Liberties, and the Fortunes of his People. Neither do I ſay this with the leaſt Intention to detract from the many Virtues of that excellent King; whoſe Character I am ſenſible will on this Account be very much leſſened in the Opinion of an *Engliſh* Reader: But, I take this Defect among them to have riſen from their Ignorance; by not having hitherto reduced *Politicks* into a *Science*, as the more acute Wits of *Europe* have done. For, I remember very well, in a Diſcourſe one Day with the King; when I happened to ſay, there were ſeveral thouſand Books among us, written upon the *Art of Government*; it gave him (directly contrary to my Intention) a very mean Opinion of our Underſtandings. He profeſſed both to abominate and deſpiſe all *Myſtery*, *Refinement*, and *Intrigue*, either in a Prince or a Miniſter. He could not tell what I meant

Digitized by Google

meant by *Secrets of State*, where an Enemy or ſome Rival Nation were not in the Caſe. He confined the Knowledge of governing within very *narrow Bounds*; to common Senſe and Reaſon, to Juſtice and Lenity, to the ſpeedy Determination of Civil and Criminal Cauſes; with ſome other obvious Topicks which are not worth conſidering. And, he gave it for his Opinion; that whoever could make two Ears of Corn, or two Blades of Graſs to grow upon a Spot of Ground where only one grew before; would deſerve better of Mankind, and do more eſſential Service to his Country, than the whole Race of Politicians put together.

THE Learning of this People is very defective; conſiſting only in Morality, Hiſtory, Poetry and Mathematicks; wherein they muſt be allowed to excel. But, the laſt of theſe is wholly applied to what may be uſeful in Life; to the Improvement of Agriculture and all mechanical Arts; ſo, that among us it would be little eſteemed. And, as to Ideas, Entities, Abſtractions and Tranſcendentals, I could never drive the leaſt Conception into their Heads.

No Law of that Country muſt exceed in Words the Number of Letters in their Alphabet; which conſiſts only of two and twenty. But indeed, few of them extend even to that Length. They are expreſſed in the moſt plain and ſimple Terms, wherein thoſe People are not Mercurial enough to diſcover above one Interpretation. And, to write a Comment upon any Law, is a Capital Crime. As to the Deciſion of Civil Cauſes, or Proceedings againſt Criminals, their Precedents are ſo few, that they have little Reaſon to boaſt of any extraordinary Skill in either.

THEY have had the Art of Printing, as well as the

Digitized by Google

the *Chineſe*, Time out of Mind. But their Libraries are not very large; for that of the King's, which is reckoned the largeſt, doth not amount to above a thouſand Volumes; placed in a Gallery of twelve hundred Foot long; from whence I had Liberty to borrow what Books I pleaſed. The Queen's Joyner had contrived in one of *Glumdalclitch*'s Rooms a Kind of wooden Machine five and twenty Foot high, formed like a ſtanding Ladder; the Steps were each fifty Foot long: It was indeed a moveable Pair of Stairs, the loweſt End placed at ten Foot Diſtance from the Wall of the Chamber. The Book I had a Mind to read was put up leaning againſt the Wall. I firſt mounted to the upper Step of the Ladder, and turning my Face towards the Book, began at the Top of the Page, and ſo walking to the Right and Left about eight or ten Paces, according to the Length of the Lines, until I had gotten a little below the Level of mine Eyes; and then deſcending gradually until I came to the Bottom: After which, I mounted again, and began the other Page in the ſame Manner, and ſo turned over the Leaf, which I could eaſily do with both my Hands, for it was as thick and ſtiff as a Paſteboard, and in the largeſt Folio's not above eighteen or twenty Foot long.

THEIR Style is clear, maſculine, and ſmooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unneceſſary Words, or uſing various Expreſſions. I have peruſed many of their Books, eſpecially thoſe in Hiſtory and Morality. Among the latter I was much diverted with a little old Treatiſe, which always lay in *Glumdalclitch*'s Bedchamber, and belonged to her Governeſs, a grave elderly Gentlewoman, who dealt in Writings of Morality and Devotion. The Book treats of the Weakneſs

Digitized by Google

Weakneſs of Human Kind; and is in little Eſteem, except among Women and the Vulgar. However, I was curious to ſee what an Author of that Country could ſay upon ſuch a Subject. This Writer went through all the uſual Topicks of *European* Moraliſts; ſhewing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpleſs an Animal was Man in his own Nature; how unable to defend himſelf from Inclemencies of the Air, or the Fury of wild Beaſts: How much he was excelled by one Creature in Strength, by another in Speed, by a third in Foreſight, by a fourth in Induſtry. He added, that Nature was degenerated in theſe latter declining Ages of the World, and could now produce only ſmall abortive Births, in Compariſon of thoſe in ancient Times. He ſaid, it was very reaſonable to think, not only that the Species of Man were originally much larger, but alſo, that there muſt have been Giants in former Ages; which, as it is aſſerted by Hiſtory and Tradition, ſo it hath been confirmed by huge Bones and Sculls, caſually dug up in ſeveral Parts of the Kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled Race of Man in our Days. He argued, that the very Laws of Nature abſolutely required we ſhould have been made in the Beginning, of a Size more large and robuſt, not ſo liable to Deſtruction from every little Accident of a Tile falling from an Houſe, or a Stone caſt from the Hand of a Boy, or of being drowned in a little Brook. From this Way of Reaſoning, the Author drew ſeveral moral Applications uſeful in the Conduct of Life, but needleſs here to repeat. For, my own Part, I could not avoid reflecting, how univerſally this Talent was ſpread of drawing Lectures in Morality, or indeed rather Matter of Diſcontent and Repining, from the Quarrels we raiſe with Nature.

Digitized by Google

And, I believe, upon a ſtrict Enquiry, thoſe Quarrels might be ſhewn as ill grounded among us, as they are among that People.

As to their military Affairs; they boaſt that the King's Army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy ſix thouſand Foot, and thirty two thouſand Horſe: If that may be called an Army, which is made up of Tradeſmen in the ſeveral Cities, and Farmers in the Country, whoſe Commanders are only the Nobility and Gentry, without Pay or Reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their Exerciſes; and under very good Diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great Merit: For, how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every Farmer is under the Command of his own Landlord, and every Citizen under that of the principal Men in his own City, choſen after the Manner of *Venice* by *Ballot*?

I HAVE often ſeen the Militia of *Lorbrulgrud* drawn out to Exerciſe in a great Field near the City, of twenty Miles ſquare. They were in all not above twenty five thouſand Foot, and ſix thouſand Horſe; but, it was impoſſible for me to compute their Number, conſidering the Space of Ground they took up. A *Cavalier* mounted on a large Steed might be about ninety Foot high. I have ſeen this whole Body of Horſe, upon the Word of Command, draw their Swords at once, and brandiſh them in the Air. Imagination can figure nothing ſo grand, ſo ſurprizing, and ſo aſtoniſhing. It looked as if ten thouſand Flaſhes of Lightning were darting at the ſame Time from every Quarter of the Sky.

I WAS curious to know how this Prince, to whoſe Dominions there is no Acceſs from any other Country, came to think of Armies, or to teach his People the Practice of military Diſcipline. But,

Digitized by Google

But, I was ſoon informed, both by Converſation, and Reading their Hiſtories. For, in the Courſe of many Ages, they have been troubled with the ſame Diſeaſe, to which the whole Race of Mankind is ſubject; the Nobility often contending for Power, the People for Liberty, and the King for abſolute Dominion. All which, however happily tempered by the Laws of that Kingdom, have been ſometimes violated by each of the three Parties; and have more than once occaſioned Civil Wars, the laſt whereof, was happily put an End to by this Prince's Grandfather in a general Compoſition; and the Militia then ſettled with common Conſent, hath been ever ſince kept in the ſtricteſt Duty.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

The King and Queen make a Progreſs to the Frontiers. The Author attends them. The Manner in which he leaves the Country very particularly related. He returns to ENGLAND.

I HAD always a ſtrong Impulſe that I ſhould ſome Time recover my Liberty, although it were impoſſible to conjecture by what Means, or to form any Project with the leaſt Hope of ſucceeding. The Ship in which I ſailed was the firſt ever known to be driven within Sight of that Coaſt; and the King had given ſtrict Orders, that if at any Time another appeared, it ſhould be taken aſhore, and with all its Crew and Paſſengers brought in a Tumbril to *Lorbrulgrud*. He was ſtrongly bent to get me a Woman of my own Size, by whom I might propagate the Breed: But, I think, I ſhould rather have died, than undergone the Diſgrace of leaving a Poſterity to be kept in Cages like tame Canary Birds; and perhaps in Time, ſold about the Kingdom to Perſons of Quality

Digitized by Google

lity for Curioſities. I was indeed treated with much Kindneſs; I was the Favourite of a great King and Queen, and the Delight of the whole Court; but it was upon ſuch a Foot as ill became the Dignity of human Kind. I could never forget thoſe domeſtick Pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among People with whom I could converſe upon even Terms; and walk about the Streets and Fields without Fear of being trod to Death like a Frog or young Puppy. But, my Deliverance came ſooner than I expected, and in a Manner not very common: The whole Story and Circumſtances of which I ſhall faithfully relate.

I HAD now been two Years in this Country; and, about the Beginning of the third, *Glumdalclitch* and I attended the King and Queen in a Progreſs to the South Coaſt of the Kingdom. I was carried as uſual in my travelling Box, which, as I have already deſcribed, was a very convenient Cloſet of twelve Foot wide. I had ordered a Hammock to be fixed by ſilken Ropes from the four Corners at the Top, to break the Jolts, when a Servant carried me before him on Horſeback, as I ſometimes deſired; and would often ſleep in my Hammock while we were upon the Road. On the Roof of my Cloſet, ſet not directly over the Middle of the Hammock, I ordered the Joyner to cut out a Hole of a Foot ſquare to give me Air in hot Weather as I ſlept; which Hole I ſhut at Pleaſure with a Board that drew backwards and forwards through a Groove.

WHEN we came to our Journey's End, the King thought proper to paſs a few Days at a Palace he hath near *Flanflaſnic*, a City within eighteen *Engliſh* Miles of the Sea-ſide. *Glumdalclitch* and I were much fatigued: I had gotten a ſmall Cold; but the

Digitized by Google

the poor Girl was ſo ill as to be confined to her Chamber. I longed to ſee the Ocean, which muſt be the only Scene of my Eſcape, if ever it ſhould happen. I pretended to be worſe than I really was; and deſired Leave to take the freſh Air of the Sea, with a Page whom I was very fond of, and who had ſometimes been truſted with me. I ſhall never forget with what Unwillingneſs *Glumdalclitch* conſented; nor the ſtrict Charge ſhe gave the Page to be careful of me; burſting at the ſame Time into a Flood of Tears, as if ſhe had ſome Foreboding of what was to happen. The Boy took me out in my Box about half an Hour's Walk from the Palace, towards the Rocks on the Sea-ſhore. I ordered him to ſet me down; and lifting up one of my Saſhes, caſt many a wiſtful melancholy Look towards the Sea. I found myſelf not very well; and told the Page that I had a Mind to take a Nap in my Hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the Boy ſhut the Window cloſe down, to keep out the Cold. I ſoon fell aſleep: And all I can conjecture is, that while I ſlept, the Page thinking no Danger could happen, went among the Rocks to look for Birds Eggs; having before obſerved him from my Window ſearching about, and picking up one or two in the Clefts. Be that as it will; I found my ſelf ſuddenly awaked with a violent Pull upon the Ring which was faſtned at the Top of my Box, for the Conveniency of Carriage. I felt the Box raiſed very high in the Air, and then born forward with prodigious Speed. The firſt Jolt had like to have ſhaken me out of my Hammock; but afterwards the Motion was eaſy enough. I called out ſeveral Times as loud as I could raiſe my Voice, but all to no Purpoſe. I looked towards my Windows, and could

Digitized by Google

could ſee nothing but the Clouds and Sky. I heard a Noiſe juſt over my Head like the clapping of Wings; and then began to perceive the woeful Condition I was in; that ſome Eagle had got the Ring of my Box in his Beak, with an Intent to let it fall on a Rock, like a Tortoiſe in a Shell, and then pick out my Body and devour it. For, the Sagacity and Smell of this Bird enabled him to diſcover his Quarry at a great Diſtance, although better concealed than I could be within a two Inch Board.

IN a little Time I obſerved the Noiſe and Flutter of Wings to encreaſe very faſt; and my Box was toſſed up and down like a Sign-poſt in a windy Day. I heard ſeveral Bangs or Buffets, as I thought, given to the Eagle (for ſuch I am certain it muſt have been that held the Ring of my Box in his Beak) and then all on a ſudden felt my ſelf falling perpendicularly down for above a Minute; but with ſuch incredible Swiftneſs, that I almoſt loſt my Breath. My Fall was ſtopped by a terrible Squaſh, that ſounded louder to mine Ears than the Cataract of *Niagara*; after which I was quite in the Dark for another Minute, and then my Box began to riſe ſo high, that I could ſee Light from the Tops of my Windows. I now perceived, that I was fallen into the Sea. My Box, by the Weight of my Body, the Goods that were in, and the broad Plates of Iron fixed for Strength at the four Corners of the Top and Bottom, floated about five Foot deep in Water. I did then, and do now ſuppoſe, that the Eagle which flew away with my Box, was purſued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop while he was defending himſelf againſt the Reſt, who hoped to ſhare in the Prey. The Plates of Iron faſtned to the Bottom of the Box, (for thoſe were the ſtrongeſt) preſerved the Balance while

Digitized by Google

while it fell; and hindred it from being broken on the Surface of the Water. Every Joint of it was well grooved, and the Door did not move on Hinges, but up and down like a Sash; which kept my Closet so tight, that very little Water came in. I got with much Difficulty out of my Hammock, having first ventured to draw back the Slipboard on the Roof already mentioned, contrived on Purpose to let in Air; for Want of which, I found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish my self with my dear *Glumdalclitch*, from whom one single Hour had so far divided me! And, I may say with Truth, that in the Midst of my own Misfortune, I could not forbear lamenting my poor Nurse, the Grief she would suffer for my Loss, the Displeasure of the Queen, and the Ruin of her Fortune. Perhaps many Travellers have not been under greater Difficulties and Distress than I was at this Juncture; expecting every Moment to see my Box dashed in Pieces, or at least overset by the first violent Blast, or a rising Wave. A Breach in one single Pane of Glass would have been immediate Death: Nor could any Thing have preserved the Windows but the strong Lattice Wires placed on the outside against Accidents in travelling. I saw the Water ooze in at several Crannies, although the Leaks were not considerable; and I endeavoured to stop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the Roof of my Closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the Top of it, where I might, at least, preserve my self from being shut up, as I may call it, in the Hold. Or, if I escaped these Dangers for a Day or two, what could I expect but a miserable Death of Cold and Hunger! I was four Hours under these Circumstances, expecting

Digitized by Google

pecting and indeed wiſhing every Moment to be my laſt.

I HAVE already told the Reader, that there were two ſtrong Staples fixed upon the Side of my Box, which had no Window, and into which the Servant, who uſed to carry me on Horſeback, would put a Leathern Belt, and buckle it about his Waiſt. Being in this diſconſolate State, I heard, or at leaſt thought I heard ſome kind of grating Noiſe on that Side of my Box where the Staples were fixed; and ſoon after I began to fancy that the Box was pulled, or towed along in the Sea; for, I now and then felt a Sort of tugging, which made the Waves riſe near the Tops of my Windows, leaving me almoſt in the Dark. This gave me ſome faint Hopes of Relief, although I were not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventur'd to unſcrew one of my Chairs, which were always faſtned to the Floor; and having made a hard Shift to ſcrew it down again directly under the Slipping-board that I had lately opened; I mounted on the Chair, and putting my Mouth, as near as I could to the Hole, I called for Help in a loud Voice, and in all the Languages I underſtood. I then faſtned my Handkerchief to a Stick I uſually carried, and thruſting it up the Hole, waved it ſeveral Times in the Air; that if any Boat or Ship were near, the Seamen might conjecture ſome unhappy Mortal to be ſhut up in the Box.

I FOUND no Effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my Cloſet to be moved along; and in the Space of an Hour, or better, that Side of the Box where the Staples were, and had no Window, ſtruck againſt ſomething that was hard. I apprehended it to be a Rock, and found my ſelf toſſed more than ever. I plainly heard a Noiſe

upon

Digitized by Google

upon the Cover of my Cloſet, like that of a Cable, and the grating of it as it paſſed through the Ring. I then found my ſelf hoiſted up by Degrees, at leaſt three Foot higher than I was before. Whereupon, I again thruſt up my Stick and Handkerchief, calling for Help until I was almoſt hoarſe. In return to which, I heard a great Shout repeated three Times, giving me ſuch Tranſports of Joy as are not to be conceived but by thoſe who feel them. I now heard a Trampling over my Head; and ſomebody calling through the Hole with a loud Voice in the *Engliſh* Tongue: *If there be any Body below, let them ſpeak*, I anſwered, I was an *Engliſhman*, drawn by ill Fortune into the greateſt Calamity that ever any Creature underwent; and begged, by all that was moving, to be delivered out of the Dungeon I was in. The Voice replied, I was ſafe, for my Box was faſtned to their Ship; and the Carpenter ſhould immediately come, and ſaw an Hole in the Cover, large enough to pull me out. I anſwered, that was needleſs, and would take up too much Time; for there was no more to be done, but let one of the Crew put his Finger into the Ring, and take the Box out of the Sea into the Ship, and ſo into the Captain's Cabbin. Some of them, upon hearing me talk ſo wildly, thought I was mad; others laughed; for indeed it never came into my Head, that I was now got among People of my own Stature and Strength. The Carpenter came, and in a few Minutes ſawed a Paſſage about four Foot ſquare; then let down a ſmall Ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the Ship in a very weak Condition.

THE Sailors were all in Amazement, and aſked me a thouſand Queſtions, which I had no Inclination to anſwer. I was equally confounded at the Sight of ſo many Pigmies; for ſuch I took them to be,

be, after having ſo long accuſtomed mine Eyes to the monſtrous Objects I had left. But, the Captain Mr. *Thomas Wilcocks*, an honeſt worthy *Shropſhire* Man, obſerving I was ready to faint, took me into his Cabbin, gave me a Cordial to comfort me, and made me *turn in* upon his own Bed; adviſing me to take a little Reſt, of which I had great Need. Before I went to Sleep, I gave him to underſtand, that I had ſome valuable Furniture in my Box, too good to be loſt; a fine Hammock, an handſome Field-bed, two Chairs, a Table and a Cabinet: That, my Cloſet was hung on all Sides, or rather quilted with Silk and Cotton: That, if he would let one of the Crew bring my Cloſet into his Cabbin, I would open it before him, and ſhew him my Goods. The Captain hearing me utter theſe Abſurdities, concluded I was raving: However, (I ſuppoſe to pacify me) he promiſed to give Order as I deſired; and going upon Deck, ſent ſome of his Men down into my Cloſet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my Goods, and ſtripped off the Quilting; but the Chairs, Cabinet and Bed-ſted being ſcrewed to the Floor, were much damaged by the Ignorance of the Seamen, who tore them up by Force. Then they knocked off ſome of the Boards for the Uſe of the Ship; and when they had got all they had a Mind for, let the Hulk drop into the Sea, which, by reaſon of many Breaches made in the Bottom and Sides, ſunk to *rights*. And indeed I was glad not to have been a Spectator of the Havock they made; becauſe I am confident it would have ſenſibly touched me, by bringing former Paſſages into my Mind, which I had rather forget.

I SLEPT ſome Hours, but perpetually diſturbed with Dreams of the Place I had left, and the Dangers

gers I had escaped. However, upon waking I found my self much recovered. It was now about eight a Clock at Night, and the Captain ordered Supper immediately, thinking I had already fasted too long. He entertained me with great Kindness, observing me not to look wildly, or talk inconsistently; and when we were left alone, desired I would give him a Relation of my Travels, and by what Accident I came to be set adrift in that monstrous wooden Chest. He said, that about twelve a Clock at Noon, as he was looking through his Glass, he spied it at a Distance, and thought it was a Sail, which he had a Mind to make; being not much out of his Course, in hopes of buying some Biscuit, his own beginning to fall short. That, upon coming nearer, and finding his Error, he sent out his Long-boat to discover what I was. That, his Men came back in a Fright, swearing they had seen a swimming House: That, he laughed at their Folly, and went himself in the Boat, ordering his Men to take a strong Cable along with them: That, the Weather being calm, he rowed round me several Times, observed my Windows and the Wire Lattices that defended them. That he discovered two Staples upon one Side, which was all of Boards, without any Passage for Light. He then commanded his Men to row up to that Side; and fastning a Cable to one of the Staples, ordered his Men to tow my Chest (as he called it) towards the Ship. When it was there, he gave Directions to fasten another Cable to the Ring, fixed in the Cover, and to raise up my Chest with Pullies, which all the Sailors were not able to do above two or three Foot. He said, they saw my Stick and Handkerchief thrust out of the Hole, and concluded, that some unhappy Man must be shut up in the Cavity. I asked whether he or the Crew had

seen

Digitized by Google

ſeen any prodigious Birds in the Air about the Time he firſt diſcovered me: To which he anſwered, that diſcourſing this Matter with the Sailors while I was aſleep, one of them ſaid, he had *obſerved* three Eagles flying towards the North; but remarked nothing of their being larger than the uſual Size; which I ſuppoſe muſt be imputed to the great Height they were at: And he could not gueſs the Reaſon of my Queſtion. I then asked the Captain how far he reckoned we might be from Land; he ſaid, by the beſt Computation he could make, we were at leaſt an hundred Leagues. I aſſured him, that he muſt be miſtaken by almoſt half; for I had not left the Country from whence I came, above two Hours before I dropt into the Sea. Whereupon he began again to think that my Brain was diſturbed, of which he gave me a Hint, and adviſed me to go to Bed in a Cabin he had provided. I aſſured him I was well refreſhed with his good Entertainment and Company, and as much in my Senſes as ever I was in my Life. He then grew ſerious, and deſired to ask me freely, whether I were not troubled in Mind, by the Conſciouſneſs of ſome enormous Crime, for which I was puniſhed at the Command of ſome Prince, by expoſing me in that Cheſt; as great Criminals in other Countries have been forced to Sea in a leaky Veſſel, without Proviſions: For, although he ſhould be ſorry to have taken ſo ill a Man into his Ship, yet he would engage his Word to ſet me ſafe on Shoar in the firſt Port where we arrived. He added, that his Suſpicions were much increaſed by ſome very abſurd Speeches I had delivered at firſt to the Sailors, and afterwards to himſelf, in relation to my Cloſet or Cheſt, as well as by my odd Looks and Behaviour while I was at Supper.

I BEG-

Digitized by Google

I BEGGED his Patience to hear me tell my Story; which I faithfully did from the laſt Time I left *England*, to the Moment he firſt diſcovered me. And, as Truth always forceth its Way into rational Minds; ſo, this honeſt worthy Gentleman, who had ſome Tincture of Learning, and very good Senſe, was immediately convinced of my Candor and Veracity. But, further to confirm all I had ſaid, I entreated him to give Order that my Cabinet ſhould be brought, of which I kept the Key in my Pocket. (for he had already informed me how the Seamen diſpoſed of my Cloſet) I opened it in his Preſence, and ſhewed him the ſmall Collection of Rarities I made in the Country from whence I had been ſo ſtrangely delivered. There was the Comb I had contrived out of the Stumps of the King's Beard; and another of the ſame Materials, but fixed into a Paring of her Majeſty's Thumb-nail, which ſerved for the Back. There was a Collection of Needles and Pins from a Foot to half a Yard long. Four Waſp-ſtings, like Joyners Tacks: Some Combings of the Queen's Hair: A Gold Ring which one Day ſhe made me a Preſent of in a moſt obliging Manner, taking it from her little Finger, and throwing it over my Head like a Collar. I deſired the Captain would pleaſe to accept this Ring in return of his Civilities; which he abſolutely refuſed. I ſhewed him a Corn, that I had cut off with my own Hand, from a Maid of Honour's Toe; it was about the Bigneſs of a *Kentiſh* Pippin, and grown ſo hard, that when I returned to *England*, I got it hollowed into a Cup, and ſet in Silver. Laſtly, I deſired him to ſee the Breeches I had then on, which were made of a Mouſe's Skin.

I COULD force nothing on him but a Footman's Tooth, which I obſerved him to examine with great

Digitized by Google

great Curiosity, and found he had a Fancy for it. He received it with abundance of Thanks, more than such a Trifle could deserve. It was drawn by an unskilful Surgeon in a Mistake from one of *Glumdalclitch*'s Men, who was afflicted with the Tooth-ach; but it was as sound as any in his Head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my Cabinet. It was about a Foot long, and four Inches in Diameter.

THE Captain was very well satisfied with this plain Relation I had given him; and said, he hoped when we returned to *England*, I would oblige the World by putting it in Paper, and making it publick. My Answer was, that I thought we were already overstocked with Books of Travels: That, nothing could now pass which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted, some Authors less consulted Truth than their own Vanity or Interest, or the Diversion of ignorant Readers. That, my Story could contain little beside common Events, without those ornamental Descriptions of strange Plants, Trees, Birds and other Animals; or the barbarous Customs and Idolatry of savage People, with which most Writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good Opinion, and promised to take the Matter into my Thoughts.

HE said, he wondered at one Thing very much; which was to hear me speak so loud; asking me whether the King or Queen of that Country were thick of Hearing. I told him it was what I had been used to for above two Years past; and that I admired as much at the Voices of him and his Men, who seemed to me only to whisper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But when I spoke in that Country, it was like a Man talking in the Street, to another looking out from the Top of a Steeple,

Digitized by Google

Steeple, unleſs when I was placed upon a Table, or held in any Perſon's Hand. I told him, I had likewiſe obſerved another Thing; that when I firſt got into the Ship, and the Sailors ſtood all about me, I thought they were the moſt little, contemptible Creatures I had ever beheld. For, indeed, while I was in that Prince's Country, I could never endure to look in a Glaſs after mine Eyes had been accuſtomed to ſuch prodigious Objects; becauſe, the Compariſon gave me ſo deſpicable a Conceit of my ſelf. The Captain ſaid, that while we were at Supper, he obſerved me to look at every Thing with a Sort of Wonder; and, that I often ſeemed hardly able to contain my Laughter; which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to ſome Diſorder in my Brain. I anſwered, it was very true; and I wondered how I could forbear, when I ſaw his Diſhes of the Size of a Silver Three-pence, a Leg of Pork hardly a Mouthful, a Cup not ſo big as a Nutſhel: And ſo I went on, deſcribing the reſt of his Houſhold Stuff and Proviſions after the ſame Manner. For, although the Queen had ordered a little Equipage of all Things neceſſary for me, while I was in her Service; yet, my Ideas were wholly taken up with what I ſaw on every Side of me; and I winked at my own Littleneſs, as People do at their own Faults. The Captain underſtood my Raillery very well, and merrily reply'd with the old *Engliſh* Proverb, that he doubted mine Eyes were bigger than my Belly; for he did not obſerve my Stomach ſo good, although I had faſted all Day: And, continuing in his Mirth, proteſted he would have gladly given an hundred Pounds to have ſeen my Cloſet in the Eagle's Bill, and afterwards in its Fall from ſo great an Height into the Sea, which would certainly have been a moſt aſtoniſhing Object;

Digitized by Google

ject, worthy to have the Deſcription of it tranſmitted to future Ages: And, the Compariſon of *Phaeton* was ſo obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the Conceit.

The Captain having been at *Tonquin*, was, in his Return to *England*, driven North Eaſtward to the Latitude of 44 Degrees, and of Longitude 143. But, meeting a Trade Wind, two Days after I came on board him, we ſailed Southward a long Time, and coaſting *New-Holland*, kept our Courſe Weſt-ſouth-weſt, and then South-ſouth-weſt, until we doubled the *Cape of Good-hope*. Our Voyage was very proſperous, but I ſhall not trouble the Reader with a Journal of it. The Captain called in at one or two Ports, and ſent in his Long-boat for Proviſions and freſh Water; but, I never went out of the Ship until we came into the *Downs*, which was on the 3d Day of *June* 1706, about nine Months after my Eſcape. I offered to leave my Goods in Security for Payment of my Freight; but, the Captain proteſted he would not receive one Farthing. We took kind Leave of each other; and, I made him promiſe he would come to ſee me at my Houſe in *Redriff*. I hired a Horſe and Guide for five Shillings, which I borrowed of the Captain.

As I was on the Road; obſerving the Littleneſs of the Houſes, the Trees, the Cattle, and the People, I began to think my ſelf in *Lilliput*. I was afraid of trampling on every Traveller I met; and often called aloud to have them ſtand out of the Way; ſo that I had like to have gotten one or two broken Heads for my Impertinence.

WHEN I came to mine own Houſe, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the Servants opening the Door, I bent down to go in (like a Gooſe un-

Digitized by Google

der a Gate) for fear of ſtriking my Head. My Wife ran out to embrace me, but I ſtooped lower than her Knees, thinking ſhe could otherwiſe never be able to reach my Mouth. My Daughter kneeled to ask me Bleſſing, but I could not ſee her until ſhe aroſe; having been ſo long uſed to ſtand with my Head and Eyes erect to above ſixty Foot; and, then I went to take her up with one Hand, by the Waiſt. I looked down upon the Servants, and one or two Friends who were in the Houſe, as if they had been Pigmies, and I a Giant. I told my Wife, ſhe had been too thrifty; for I found ſhe had ſtarved herſelf and her Daughter to nothing. In ſhort, I behaved my ſelf ſo unaccountably, that they were all of the Captain's Opinion, when he firſt ſaw me; and, concluded I had loſt my Wits. This I mention as an Inſtance of the great Power of Habit and Prejudice.

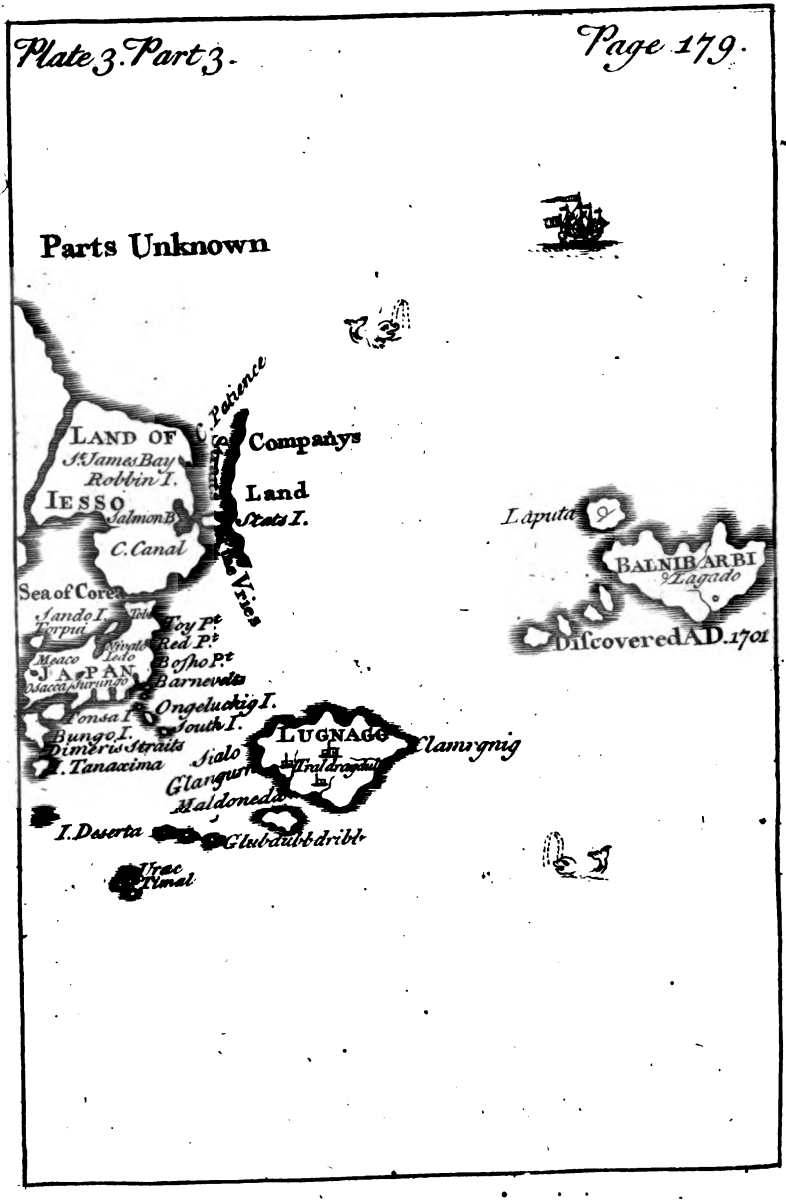
IN a little Time, I and my Family and Friends, came to a right Underſtanding: But, my Wife proteſted I ſhould never go to Sea any more; although, my evil Deſtiny ſo ordered, that ſhe had not Power to hinder me; as the Reader may know hereafter. In the mean Time, I here conclude the ſecond Part of my unfortunate Voyages.

The End of the ſecond Part.

TRA-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google


Parts Unknown
C. Patience
Companys
Land
Stats I.
LAND OF
St. James Bay
Robbin I.
IESSO
Salmon B.
C. Canal
Sea of Corea
Sando I.
Torpui
Toy Pt.
Red Pt.
Bosho Pt.
Barnevelts
Meaco
Ledo
JAPAN
Osacca
Surungo
Ongeluckig I.
South I.
Bungo I.
Dimeris Straits
I. Tanaxima
Sialo
Glangurn
Maldoneda
LUGNAGG
Clamrgnig
I. Deserta
Glubdubbdribb
Urac
Timal
Laputa
BALNIBARBI
Lagado
Discovered AD. 1701

TRAVELS.

PART III.

A Voyage *to* Laputa, Balnibarbi, Luggnagg, Glubbdubdrib, *and* Japan.

CHAP. I.

The Author ſets out on his third Voyage. Is taken by Pyrates. The Malice of a Dutchman. *His Arrival at an Iſland. He is received into* Laputa.

I HAD not been at Home above ten Days, when Captain *William Robinſon*, a *Corniſh* Man, Commander of the *Hopewell*, a ſtout Ship of three hundred Tuns, came to my Houſe. I had formerly been Surgeon of another Ship where he was Maſter, and a fourth Part Owner, in a Voyage to the *Levant*. He had always treated me

Digitized by Google

more like a Brother than an inferior Officer; and, hearing of my Arrival, made me a Viſit, as I apprehended, only out of Friendſhip, for nothing paſſed more than what is uſual after long Abſence. But, repeating his Viſits often, expreſſing his Joy to find me in good Health, asking whether I were now ſettled for Life, adding that he intended a Voyage to the *Eaſt Indies*, in two Months; at laſt he plainly invited me, although with ſome Apologies, to be Surgeon of the Ship. That, I ſhould have another Surgeon under me, beſides our two Mates. That my Salary ſhould be double to the uſual Pay: And, that having experienced my Knowledge in Sea-Affairs, to be at leaſt, equal to his, he would enter into any Engagement to follow my Advice, as much as if I had Share in the Command.

HE ſaid ſo many other obliging Things, and I knew him to be ſo honeſt a Man, that I could not reject his Propoſal; the Thirſt I had of ſeeing the World, notwithſtanding my paſt Misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever: The only Difficulty that remained, was to perſuade my Wife, whoſe Conſent, however, I at laſt obtained, by the Proſpect of Advantage ſhe propoſed to her Children.

WE ſet out the 5th Day of *Auguſt*, 1706, and arrived at Fort St. *George*, the 11th of *April* 1707. We ſtayed there three Weeks to refreſh our Crew, many of whom were ſick. From thence, we went to *Tonquin*, where the Captain reſolved to continue ſome Time; becauſe, many of the Goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be diſpatched in ſeveral Months. Therefore, in hopes to defray ſome of the Charges he muſt be at, he bought a Sloop, loaded it with ſeveral Sorts of Goods, wherewith the *Tonquineſe* uſually trade to the neighbouring Iſlands; and putting fourteen Men

Digitized by Google

Men on Board, whereof three were of the Country; he appointed me Maſter of the Sloop, and gave me Power to traffick, while he tranſacted his Affairs at *Tonquin*.

WE had not ſailed above three Days, when a great Storm ariſing, we were driven five Days to the North-north-eaſt, and then to the Eaſt; after which we had fair Weather, but ſtill with a pretty ſtrong Gale from the Weſt. Upon the 10th Day we were chaſed by two Pyrates, who ſoon overtook us; for, my Sloop was ſo deep loaden, that ſhe ſailed very ſlow; neither were we in a Condition to defend our ſelves.

WE were boarded about the ſame Time by both the Pyrates, who entered furiouſly at the Head of their Men; but, finding us all proſtrate upon our Faces, (for ſo I gave Order) they pinioned us with ſtrong Ropes, and ſetting a Guard upon us, went to ſearch the Sloop.

I OBSERVED among them a *Dutchman*, who ſeemed to be of ſome Authority, although he were not Commander of either Ship. He knew us by our Countenances to be *Engliſhmen*, and jabbering to us in his own Language, ſwore we ſhould be tyed Back to Back, and thrown into the Sea. I ſpoke *Dutch* tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged him in Conſideration of our being Chriſtians and Proteſtants, of neighbouring Countries, in ſtrict Alliance, that he would move the Captains to take ſome Pity on us. This inflamed his Rage, he repeated his Threatnings, and turning to his Companions, ſpoke with great Vehemence, in the *Japaneſe* Language, as I ſuppoſe; often uſing the Word *Chriſtianos*.

THE largeſt of the two Pyrate Ships was commanded by a *Japaneſe* Captain, who ſpoke a little *Dutch*,

Digitized by Google

Dutch, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after ſeveral Queſtions, which I anſwered in great Humility, he ſaid we ſhould not die. I made the Captain a very low Bow, and then, turning to the *Dutchman*, ſaid, I was ſorry to find more Mercy in a Heathen, than in a Brother Chriſtian. But, I had ſoon Reaſon to repent thoſe fooliſh Words; for, that malicious Reprobate, having often endeavoured, in vain, to perſuade both the Captains, that I might be thrown into the Sea, (which they would not yield to after the Promiſe made me, that I ſhould not die) however, prevailed ſo far as to have a Puniſhment inflicted on me, worſe in all human Appearance than Death itſelf. My Men were ſent, by an equal Diviſion, into both the Pyrate-Ships, and, my Sloop new manned. As to my ſelf, it was determined, that I ſhould be ſet a-drift, in a ſmall Canoe, with Paddles and a Sail, and four Days Proviſions; which laſt, the *Japaneſe* Captain, was ſo kind to double out of his own Stores, and would permit no Man to ſearch me. I got down into the Canoe, while the *Dutchman* ſtanding upon the Deck, loaded me with all the Curſes, and injurious Terms, his Language could afford.

ABOUT an Hour before we ſaw the Pyrates, I had taken an Obſervation, and found we were in the Latitude of 46 N. and of Longitude 183. When I was at ſome Diſtance from the Pyrates, I diſcovered by my Pocket-Glaſs ſeveral Iſlands to the South-eaſt. I ſet up my Sail, the Wind being fair, with a Deſign to reach the neareſt of thoſe Iſlands; which I made a Shift to do in about three Hours. It was all rocky; however, I got many Birds Eggs; and ſtriking Fire, I kindled ſome Heath and dry Sea Weed, by which I roaſted my Eggs. I eat no other Supper, being reſolved to ſpare my Proviſions

as

as much as I could. I paſſed the Night under the Shelter of a Rock, ſtrowing ſome Heath under me, and ſlept pretty well.

THE next Day I ſailed to another Iſland, and thence to a third, and fourth; ſometimes uſing my Sail, and ſometimes my Paddles. But, not to trouble the Reader with a particular Account of my Diſtreſſes; let it ſuffice, that on the 5th Day, I arrived at the laſt Iſland in my Sight, which lay South-ſouth-eaſt to the former.

THIS Iſland was at a greater Diſtance than I expected, and I did not reach it in leſs than five Hours. I encompaſſed it almoſt round, before I could find a convenient Place to land in, which was a ſmall Creek, about three Times the Wideneſs of my Canoe. I found the Iſland to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with Tufts of Graſs, and ſweet ſmelling Herbs. I took out my ſmall Proviſions, and after having refreſhed myſelf, I ſecured the Remainder in a Cave, whereof there were great Numbers. I gathered Plenty of Eggs upon the Rocks, and got a Quantity of dry Sea-Weed, and parched Graſs, which I deſigned to kindle the next Day, and roaſt my Eggs as well as I could. (For I had about me my Flint, Steel, Match, and Burning-Glaſs.) I lay all Night in the Cave where I had lodged my Proviſions. My Bed was the ſame dry Graſs and Sea-Weed which I intended for Fuel. I ſlept very little; for the Diſquiets of my Mind prevailed over my Wearineſs, and kept me awake. I conſidered how impoſſible it was to preſerve my Life, in ſo deſolate a Place; and how miſerable my End muſt be. Yet, I found my ſelf ſo liſtleſs and deſponding, that I had not the Heart to riſe; and before I could get Spirits enough to creep out of my Cave, the Day was far advanced. I walked a while among

Digitized by Google

among the Rocks, the Sky was perfectly clear, and the Sun so hot, that I was forced to turn my Face from it: When all on a sudden it became obscured, as I thought, in a Manner very different from what happens by the Interposition of a Cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vast Opake Body between me and the Sun, moving forwards towards the Island: It seemed to be about two Miles high, and hid the Sun six or seven Minutes, but I did not observe the Air to be much colder, or the Sky more darkened, than if I had stood under the Shade of a Mountain. As it approached nearer over the Place where I was, it appeared to be a firm Substance, the Bottom flat, smooth, and shining very bright from the Reflexion of the Sea below. I stood upon a Height about two hundred Yards from the Shoar, and saw this vast Body descending almost to a Parallel with me, at less than an *English* Mile Distance. I took out my Pocket-Perspective, and could plainly discover Numbers of People moving up and down the Sides of it, which appeared to be sloping, but what those People were doing, I was not able to distinguish.

THE natural Love of Life gave me some inward Motions of Joy; and I was ready to entertain a Hope, that this Adventure might some Way or other help to deliver me from the desolate Place and Condition I was in. But, at the same Time, the Reader can hardly conceive my Astonishment, to behold an Island in the Air, inhabited by Men, who were able (as it should seem) to raise, or sink, or put it into a progressive Motion, as they pleased. But not being, at that Time, in a Disposition to philosophise upon this Phænomenon, I rather chose to observe what Course the Island would take; because it seemed for a while to stand still. Yet soon after

after it advanced nearer; and I could ſee the Sides of it encompaſſed with ſeveral Gradations of Galleries and Stairs, at certain Intervals, to deſcend from one to the other. In the loweſt Gallery, I beheld ſome People fiſhing with long angling Rods, and others looking on. I waved my Cap, (for my Hat was long ſince worn out,) and my Handkerchief towards the Iſland; and upon its nearer Approach, I called and ſhouted with the utmoſt Strength of my Voice; and then looking circumſpectly, I beheld a Crowd gathered to that Side which was moſt in my View. I found by their pointing towards me and to each other, that they plainly diſcovered me, although they made no return to my Shouting: But, I could ſee four or five Men running in great Haſte up the Stairs to the Top of the Iſland, who then diſappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, that theſe were ſent for Orders to ſome Perſon in Authority upon this Occaſion.

THE Number of People increaſed; and in leſs than half an Hour, the Iſland was moved and raiſed in ſuch a Manner, that the loweſt Gallery appeared in a Parallel of leſs than an hundred Yards Diſtance from the Height were I ſtood. I then put my ſelf into the moſt ſupplicating Poſtures, and ſpoke in the humbleſt Accent, but received no Anſwer. Thoſe who ſtood neareſt over-againſt me, ſeemed to be Perſons of Diſtinction, as I ſuppoſed by their Habit. They conferred earneſtly with each other, looking often upon me. At length, one of them called out in a clear, polite, ſmooth Dialect, not unlike in Sound to the *Italian*; and therefore I returned an Anſwer in that Language, hoping at leaſt, that the Cadence might be more agreeable to his Ears. Although neither of

us

Digitized by Google

us underſtood the other, yet my Meaning was eaſily known, for the People ſaw the Diſtreſs I was in.

THEY made Signs for me to come down from the Rock, and go towards the Shoar, which I accordingly did; and the flying Iſland being raiſed to a convenient Height, the Verge directly over me, a Chain was let down from the loweſt Gallery, with a Seat faſtned to the Bottom, to which I fixed my ſelf, and was drawn up by Pullies.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

The Humours and Diſpoſitions of the LAPUTANS *deſcribed. An Account of their Learning. Of the King, and his Court. The Author's Reception there. The Inhabitants ſubject to Fears and Diſquietudes. An Account of the Women.*

AT my alighting, I was ſurrounded by a Crowd of People, but thoſe who ſtood neareſt, ſeemed to be of better Quality. They beheld me with all the Marks and Circumſtances of Wonder; neither indeed was I much in their Debt; having never until then ſeen a Race of Mortals ſo ſingular in their Shapes, Habits, and Countenances. Their Heads were all reclined either to the Right, or to the Left; one of their Eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the Zenith. Their outward Garments were adorned with the Figures of Suns, Moons, and Stars, interwoven with thoſe of Fiddles, Flutes, Harps, Trumpets, Guittars, Harpſicords, and many more Inſtruments of Muſick, unknown to us in *Europe*. I obſerved here and there many in the Habit of Servants, with a blown Bladder faſtned like a Flail to the End of a ſhort Stick, which they carried in their

Digitized by Google

their Hands. In each Bladder was a ſmall Quantity of dried Peaſe, or little Pebbles, (as I was afterwards informed.) With theſe Bladders they now and then flapped the Mouths and Ears of thoſe who ſtood near them, of which Practice I could not then conceive the Meaning. It ſeems, the Minds of thoſe People are ſo taken up with intenſe Speculations, that they neither can ſpeak, or attend to the Diſcourſes of others, without being rouzed by ſome external Action upon the Organs of Speech and Hearing; for which Reaſon, thoſe Perſons who are able to afford it, always keep a *Flapper*, (the Original is *Climenole*) in their Family, as one of their Domeſticks; nor ever walk abroad, or make Viſits, without him. And the Buſineſs of this Officer is, when two or more Perſons are in Company, gently to ſtrike with his Bladder the Mouth of him who is to ſpeak, and the Right Ear of him, or them, to whom the Speaker addreſſeth himſelf. This *Flapper* is likewiſe employed diligently to attend his Maſter in his Walks, and upon Occaſion to give him a ſoft Flap on his Eyes; becauſe he is always ſo wrapped up in Cogitation, that he is in manifeſt Danger of falling down every Precipice, and bouncing his Head againſt every Poſt; and in the Streets of joſtling others, or being joſtled into the Kennel.

IT was neceſſary to give the Reader this Information, without which he would be at the ſame Loſs with me, to underſtand the Proceedings of theſe People, as they conducted me up the Stairs, to the Top of the Iſland, and from thence to the Royal Palace. While we were aſcending, they forgot ſeveral Times what they were about, and left me to my ſelf, until their Memories were again rouzed by their *Flappers*; for they appeared altogether

Digitized by Google

gether unmoved by the ſight of my foreign Habit and Countenance, and by the Shouts of the Vulgar, whoſe Thoughts and Minds were more diſengaged.

At laſt we entered the Palace, and proceeded into the Chamber of Preſence; where I ſaw the King ſeated on his Throne, attended on each Side by Perſons of prime Quality. Before the Throne, was a large Table filled with Globes and Spheres, and Mathematical Inſtruments of all Kinds. His Majeſty took not the leaſt Notice of us, although our Entrance were not without ſufficient Noiſe, by the Concourſe of all Perſons belonging to the Court. But, he was then deep in a Problem, and we attended, at leaſt, an Hour, before he could ſolve it. There ſtood by him, on each Side a young Page, with Flaps in their Hands; and when they ſaw he was at Leiſure, one of them gently ſtruck his Mouth, and the other his Right Ear; at which he ſtarted like one awaked on the ſudden, and looking towards me, and the Company I was in, recollected the Occaſion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He ſpoke ſome Words; whereupon, immediately, a young Man with a Flap came up to my Side, and flapt me gently on the Right Ear; but I made Signs as well as I could, that I had no Occaſion for ſuch an Inſtrument; which, as I afterwards found, gave his Majeſty and the whole Court a very mean Opinion of my Underſtanding. The King, as far as I could conjecture, asked me ſeveral Queſtions, and I addreſſed my ſelf to him in all the Languages I had. When it was found, that I could neither underſtand nor be underſtood, I was conducted, by his Order, to an Apartment in his Palace, (this Prince being diſtinguiſhed above all his Predeceſſors for his Hoſpitality to Strangers,) where two Servants were appointed

Digitized by Google

pointed to attend me. My Dinner was brought, and four Perſons of Quality, whom I remembered to have ſeen very near the King's Perſon, did me the Honour to dine with me. We had two Courſes, of three Diſhes each. In the firſt Courſe, there was a Shoulder of Mutton, cut into an Æquilateral Triangle; a Piece of Beef into a Rhomboides; and a Pudding into a Cycloid. The ſecond Courſe was two Ducks, truſſed up into the Form of Fiddles; Sauſages, and Puddings, reſembling Flutes and Hautboys, and a Breaſt of Veal in the Shape of a Harp. The Servants cut our Bread into Cones, Cylinders, Parallelograms, and ſeveral other Mathematical Figures.

WHILE we were at Dinner I made bold to ask the Names of ſeveral Things in their Language; and thoſe noble Perſons, by the Aſſiſtance of their *Flappers*, delighted to give me Anſwers, hoping to raiſe my Admiration of their great Abilities, if I could be brought to converſe with them. I was ſoon able to call for Bread and Drink, or whatever elſe I wanted.

AFTER Dinner my Company withdrew, and a Perſon was ſent to me by the King's Order, attended by a *Flapper*. He brought with him, Pen, Ink, and Paper, and three or four Books; giving me to underſtand by Signs, that he was ſent to teach me the Language. We ſat together four Hours, in which Time, I wrote down a great Number of Words in Columns, with the Tranſlations over-againſt them. I likewiſe made a Shift to learn ſeveral ſhort Sentences. For, my Tutor would order one of my Servants to fetch ſomething, to turn about, to make a Bow, to ſit, or ſtand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the Sentence in Writing. He ſhewed me alſo, in one of his

Digitized by Google

his Books, the Figures of the Sun, Moon, and Stars, the Zodiack, the Tropics, and Polar Circles, together with the Denominations of many Figures of Planes and Solids. He gave me the Names and Deſcriptions of all the Muſical Inſtruments, and the general Terms of Art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my Words, with their Interpretations, in alphabetical Order. And thus, in a few Days, by the Help of a very faithful Memory, I got ſome Inſight into their Language.

THE Word, which I interpret the *Flying* or *Floating Iſland*, is in the Original *Laputa*; whereof I could never learn the true Etymology. *Lap* in the old obſolete Language ſignifieth *High*, and *Untuh* a *Governor*; from which they ſay by Corruption was derived *Laputa* from *Lapuntah*. But I do not approve of this Derivation, which ſeems to be a little ſtrained. I ventured to offer to the Learned among them, a Conjecture of my own, that *Laputa* was *quaſi Lap outed*; *Lap* ſignifying properly the dancing of the Sun Beams in the Sea; and *outed* a Wing, which however I ſhall not obtrude, but ſubmit to the judicious Reader.

THOSE to whom the King had entruſted me, obſerving how ill I was clad, ordered a Taylor to come next Morning and take my Meaſure for a Suit of Cloaths. This Operator did his Office after a different Manner from thoſe of his Trade in *Europe*. He firſt took my Altitude by a Quadrant, and then with Rule and Compaſſes, deſcribed the Dimenſions and Out-Lines of my whole Body; all which he entered upon Paper, and in ſix Days brought my Cloaths very ill made, and quite out of Shape, by happening to miſtake a Figure in the Calculation.

Digitized by Google

Calculation. But my Comfort was, that I obſerved ſuch Accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

DURING my Confinement for want of Cloaths, and by an Indiſpoſition that held me ſome Days longer, I much enlarged my Dictionary; and when I went next to Court, was able to underſtand many Things the King ſpoke, and to return him ſome Kind of Anſwers. His Majeſty had given Orders, that the Iſland ſhould move North-Eaſt and by Eaſt, to the vertical Point over *Lagado*, and Metropolis of the whole Kingdom, below upon the firm Earth. It was about ninety Leagues diſtant, and our Voyage laſted four Days and an Half. I was not in the leaſt ſenſible of the progreſſive Motion made in the Air by the Iſland. On the ſecond Morning, about eleven o'Clock, the King himſelf in Perſon, attended by his Nobility, Courtiers, and Officers, having prepared all their Muſical Inſtruments, played on them for three Hours without Intermiſſion; ſo that I was quite ſtunned with the Noiſe; neither could I poſſibly gueſs the Meaning, until my Tutor informed me. He ſaid, that the People of their Iſland had their Ears adapted to hear the Muſick of the Spheres, which always played at certain Periods, and the Court was now prepared to bear their Part in whatever Inſtrument they moſt excelled.

IN our Journey towards *Lagado*, the Capital City, his Majeſty ordered that the Iſland ſhould ſtop over certain Towns and Villages, from whence he might receive the Petitions of his Subjects. And to this Purpoſe, ſeveral Packthreads were let down with ſmall Weights at the Bottom. On theſe Packthreads the People ſtrung their Petitions, which mounted up directly like the Scraps of Paper faſtned by School-Boys at the End of the String that holds their

Digitized by Google

their Kite. Sometimes we received Wine and Victuals from below, which were drawn up by Pullies.

THE Knowledge I had in Mathematicks gave me great Aſſiſtance in acquiring their Phraſeology, which depended much upon that Science and Muſick; and in the latter I was not unſkilled. Their Ideas are perpetually converſant in Lines and Figures. If they would, for Example, praiſe the Beauty of a Woman, or any other Animal, they deſcribe it by Rhombs, Circles, Parallelograms, Ellipſes, and other Geometrical Terms; or elſe by Words of Art drawn from Muſick, needleſs here to repeat. I obſerved in the King's Kitchen all Sorts of Mathematical and Muſical Inſtruments, after the Figures of which they cut up the Joynts that were ſerved to his Majeſty's Table.

THEIR Houſes are very ill built, the Walls bevil, without one right Angle in any Apartment; and this Defect ariſeth from the Contempt they bear for practical Geometry; which they deſpiſe as vulgar and mechanick, thoſe Inſtructions they give being too refined for the Intellectuals of their Workmen; which occaſions perpetual Miſtakes. And, although they are dextrous enough upon a Piece of Paper in the Management of the Rule, the Pencil, and the Divider, yet in the common Actions and Behaviour of Life, I have not ſeen a more clumſy, aukward, and unhandy People, nor ſo ſlow and perplexed in their Conceptions upon all other Subjects, except thoſe of Mathematicks and Muſick. They are very bad Reaſoners, and vehemently given to Oppoſition, unleſs when they happen to be of the right Opinion, which is ſeldom their Caſe. Imagination, Fancy, and Invention, they are wholly Strangers to, nor have any Words

Digitized by Google

in their Language by which thoſe Ideas can be expreſſed; the whole Compaſs of their Thoughts and Mind, being ſhut up within the two forementioned Sciences.

MOST of them, and eſpecially thoſe who deal in the Aſtronomical Part, have great Faith in judicial Aſtrology, although they are aſhamed to own it publickly. But, what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the ſtrong Diſpoſition I obſerved in them towards News and Politicks; perpetually enquiring into publick Affairs, giving their Judgments in Matters of State; and paſſionately diſputing every Inch of a Party Opinion. I have indeed obſerved the ſame Diſpoſition among moſt of the Mathematicians I have known in *Europe*; although I could never diſcover the leaſt Analogy between the two Sciences; unleſs thoſe People ſuppoſe, that becauſe the ſmalleſt Circle hath as many Degrees as the largeſt, therefore the Regulation and Management of the World require no more Abilities than the handling and turning of a Globe. But, I rather take this Quality to ſpring from a very common Infirmity of human Nature, inclining us to be more curious and conceited in Matters where we have leaſt Concern, and for which we are leaſt adapted either by Study or Nature.

THESE People are under continual Diſquietudes, never enjoying a Minute's Peace of Mind; and their Diſturbances proceed from Cauſes which very little affect the reſt of Mortals. Their Apprehenſions ariſe from ſeveral Changes they dread in the Celeſtial Bodies. For Inſtance; that the Earth by the continual Approaches of the Sun towards it, muſt in Courſe of Time be abſorbed or ſwallowed up. That, the Face of the Sun will by Degrees be encruſted

Digitized by Google

encruſted with its own Effluvia, and give no more Light to the World. That, the Earth very narrowly eſcaped a Bruſh from the Tail of the laſt Comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to Aſhes; and that the next, which they have calculated for one and thirty Years hence, will probably deſtroy us. For, if in its Perihelion it ſhould approach within a certain Degree of the Sun, (as by their Calculations they have Reaſon to dread) it will conceive a Degree of Heat ten thouſand Times more intenſe than that of red hot glowing Iron; and in its Abſence from the Sun, carry a blazing Tail ten hundred thouſand and fourteen Miles long; through which, if the Earth ſhould paſs at the Diſtance of one hundred thouſand Miles from the *Nucleus*, or main Body of the Comet, it muſt in its Paſſage be ſet on Fire, and reduced to Aſhes. That, the Sun daily ſpending its Rays without any Nutriment to ſupply them, will at laſt be wholly conſumed and annihilated; which muſt be attended with the Deſtruction of this Earth, and of all the Planets that receive their Light from it.

THEY are ſo perpetually alarmed with the Apprehenſions of theſe, and the like impending Dangers, that they can neither ſleep quietly in their Beds, nor have any Reliſh for the common Pleaſures or Amuſements of Life. When they meet an Acquaintance in the Morning, the firſt Queſtion is about the Sun's Health; how he looked at his Setting and Riſing, and what Hopes they have to avoid the Stroak of the approaching Comet. This Converſation they are apt to run into with the ſame Temper that Boys diſcover, in delighting to hear terrible Stories of Sprites and Hobgoblins, which they greedily liſten to, and dare not go to Bed for Fear.

Digitized by Google

THE Women of the Iſland have Abundance of Vivacity; they contemn their Husbands, and are exceedingly fond of Strangers, whereof there is always a conſiderable Number from the Continent below, attending at Court, either upon Affairs of the ſeveral Towns and Corporations, or their own particular Occaſions; but are much deſpiſed, becauſe they want the ſame Endowments. Among theſe the Ladies chuſe their Gallants: But the Vexation is, that they act with too much Eaſe and Security; for the Husband is always ſo wrapped in Speculation, that the Miſtreſs and Lover may proceed to the greateſt Familiarities before his Face, if he be but provided with Paper and Implements, and without his *Flapper* at his Side.

THE Wives and Daughters lament their Confinement to the Iſland, although I think it the moſt delicious Spot of Ground in the World; and although they live here in the greateſt Plenty and Magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they pleaſe: They long to ſee the World, and take the Diverſions of the Metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular Licence from the King; and this is not eaſy to be obtained, becauſe the People of Quality have found by frequent Experience, how hard it is to perſuade their Women to return from below. I was told, that a great Court Lady, who had ſeveral Children, is married to the Prime Miniſter, the richeſt Subject in the Kingdom, a very graceful Perſon, extremely fond of her, and lives in the fineſt Palace of the Iſland; went down to *Lagado*, on the Pretence of Health, there hid herſelf for ſeveral Months, until the King ſent a Warrant to ſearch for her; and ſhe was found in an obſcure Eating-Houſe all in Rags, having pawned her Clothes to maintain an old deformed

Digitized by Google

formed Footman, who beat her every Day, and in whoſe Company ſhe was taken much againſt her Will. And, although her Husband received her with all poſſible Kindneſs; and without the leaſt Reproach; ſhe ſoon after contrived to ſteal down again with all her Jewels, to the ſame Gallant, and hath not been heard of ſince.

THIS may perhaps paſs with the Reader, rather for an *European* or *Engliſh* Story, than for one of a Country ſo remote. But he may pleaſe to conſider, that the Caprices of Womankind are not limited by any Climate or Nation; and that they are much more uniform than can be eaſily imagined.

IN about a Month's Time I had made a tolerable Proficiency in their Language, and was able to anſwer moſt of the King's Queſtions, when I had the Honour to attend him. His Majeſty diſcovered not the leaſt Curioſity to enquire into the Laws, Government, Hiſtory, Religion, or Manners of the Countries where I had been; but confined his Queſtions to the State of Mathematicks, and received the Account I gave him, with great Contempt and Indifference, although often rouzed by his *Flapper* on each Side.

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

A Phænomenon ſolved by modern Philoſophy and Aſtronomy. The LAPUTANS *great Improvements in the latter. The King's Method of ſuppreſſing Inſurrections.*

I DESIRED Leave of this Prince to ſee the Curioſities of the Iſland; which he was graciouſly pleaſed to grant, and ordered my Tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know to what Cauſe in Art or in Nature, it owed its ſeveral Motions; whereof I will now give a philoſophical Account to the Reader.

THE flying, or floating Iſland, is exactly circular; its Diameter ſeven thouſand eight hundred and thirty ſeven Yards, or about four Miles and an Half, and conſequently contains ten thouſand Acres. It is three hundred Yards thick. The Bottom, or under Surface, which appears to thoſe who view it from below, is one even regular Plate of Adamant, ſhooting up to the Height of about two hundred Yards. Above it lye the ſeveral Minerals in their uſual Order; and over all is a Coat of rich Mould ten or twelve Foot deep. The Declivity of the Upper Surface, from the Circumference

Digitized by Google

rence to the Center, is the natural Cauſe why all the Dews and Rains which fall upon the Iſland, are conveyed in ſmall Rivulets towards the Middle, where they are emptied into four large Baſons, each of about half a Mile in Circuit, and two hundred Yards diſtant from the Center. From theſe Baſons the Water is continually exhaled by the Sun in the Day-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Beſides, as it is in the Power of the Monarch to raiſe the Iſland above the Region of Clouds and Vapours, he can prevent the falling of Dews and Rains whenever he pleaſeth. For the higheſt Clouds cannot riſe above two Miles, as Naturaliſts agree, at leaſt they were never known to do ſo in that Country.

AT the Center of the Iſland there is a Chaſm about fifty Yards in Diameter, from whence the Aſtronomers deſcend into a large Dome, which is therefore called *Flandona Gagnole*, or the *Aſtronomers Cave*; ſituated at the Depth of an hundred Yards beneath the upper Surface of the Adamant. In this Cave are twenty Lamps continually burning, which from the Reflection of the Adamant caſt a ſtrong Light into every Part. The Place is ſtored with great Variety of Sextants, Quadrants, Teleſcopes, Aſtrolabes, and other Aſtronomical Inſtruments. But the greateſt Curioſity, upon which the Fate of the Iſland depends, is a Load-Stone of a prodigious Size, in Shape reſembling a Weaver's Shuttle. It is in Length ſix Yards, and in the thickeſt Part at leaſt three Yards over. This Magnet is ſuſtained by a very ſtrong Axle of Adamant, paſſing through its Middle, upon which it plays, and is poized ſo exactly, that the weakeſt Hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow Cylinder of Adamant, four Foot deep, as many

Digitized by Google

many thick, and twelve Yards in Diameter, placed horizontally, and ſupported by eight Adamantine Feet, each ſix Yards high. In the Middle of the Concave Side there is a Groove twelve Inches deep, in which the Extremities of the Axle are lodged, and turned round as there is Occaſion.

THIS Stone cannot be moved from its Place by any Force, becauſe the Hoop and its Feet are one continued Piece with that Body of Adamant which conſtitutes the Bottom of the Iſland.

BY Means of this Load-Stone, the Iſland is made to riſe and fall, and move from one Place to another. For, with reſpect to that Part of the Earth over which the Monarch preſides, the Stone is endued at one of its Sides with an attractive Power, and at the other with a repulſive. Upon placing the Magnet erect with its attracting End towards the Earth, the Iſland deſcends; but when the repelling Extremity points downwards, the Iſland mounts directly upwards. When the Poſition of the Stone is oblique, the Motion of the Iſland is ſo to. For in this Magnet the Forces always act in Lines parallel to its Direction.

BY this oblique Motion, the Iſland is conveyed to different Parts of the Monarch's Dominions. To explain the Manner of its Progreſs, let *A B* repreſent a Line drawn croſs the Dominions of *Balnibarbi*; let the Line *c d* repreſent the Load-Stone, of which let *d* be the repelling End, and *c* the attracting End, the Iſland being over *C*; let the Stone be placed in the Poſition *c d* with its repelling End downwards; then the Iſland will be driven upwards obliquely towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the Stone be turned upon its Axle until its attracting End points towards *E*, and then the Iſland will be carried obliquely towards *E*; where,

Digitized by Google

where, if the Stone be again turned upon its Axle until it ſtands in the Poſition *E. F.* with its repelling Point downwards, the Iſland will riſe obliquely towards *F*, where, by directing the attracting End towards *G*, the Iſland may be carried to *G*, and from *G* to *H*, by turning the Stone ſo as to make its repelling Extremity point directly downwards. And thus by changing the Situation of the Stone as often as there is Occaſion, the Iſland is made to riſe and fall by Turns in an oblique Direction; and by thoſe alternate Riſings and Fallings (the Obliquity being not conſiderable) is conveyed from one Part of the Dominions to the other.

BUT it muſt be obſerved, that this Iſland cannot move beyond the Extent of the Dominions below; nor can it riſe above the Height of four Miles. For which the Aſtronomers (who have written large Syſtems concerning this Stone) aſſign the following Reaſon: That the Magnetick Virtue doth not extend beyond the Diſtance of four Miles, and that the Mineral which acts upon the Stone in the Bowels of the Earth, and in the Sea about ſix Leagues diſtant from the Shoar, is not diffuſed through the whole Globe, but terminated with the Limits of the King's Dominions: And it was eaſy from the great Advantage of ſuch a ſuperior Situation, for a Prince to bring under his Obedience whatever Country lay within the Attraction of that Magnet.

WHEN the Stone is put parallel to the Plane of the Horizon, the Iſland ſtandeth ſtill; for in that Caſe, the Extremities of it being at equal Diſtance from the Earth, act with equal Force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in puſhing upwards; and conſequently no Motion can enſue.

THIS Load-Stone is under the Care of certain Aſtronomers,

Digitized by Google

Aſtronomers, who from Time to Time give it ſuch Poſitions as the Monarch directs. They ſpend the greateſt Part of their Lives in obſerving the celeſtial Bodies, which they do by the Aſſiſtance of Glaſſes, far excelling ours in Goodneſs. For, although their largeſt Teleſcopes do not exceed three Feet, they magnify much more than thoſe of a hundred with us, and ſhew the Stars with greater Clearneſs. This Advantage hath enabled them to extend their Diſcoveries much farther than our Aſtronomers in *Europe*. They have made a Catalogue of ten thouſand fixed Stars, whereas the largeſt of ours do not contain above one third Part of that Number. They have likewiſe diſcovered two leſſer Stars or *Satellites*, which revolve about *Mars*; whereof the innermoſt is diſtant from the Center of the primary Planet exactly three of his Diameters, and the outermoſt five; the former revolves in the Space of ten Hours; and the latter in twenty one and an half; ſo that the Squares of their periodical Times, are very near in the ſame Proportion with the Cubes of their Diſtance from the Center of *Mars*; which evidently ſhews them to be governed by the ſame Law of Gravitation, that influences the other heavenly Bodies.

THEY have obſerved ninety-three different Comets, and ſettled their Periods with great Exactneſs. If this be true, (and they affirm it with great Confidence) it is much to be wiſhed that their Obſervations were made publick; whereby the Theory of Comets, which at preſent is very lame and defective, might be brought to the ſame Perfection with other Parts of Aſtronomy.

THE King would be the moſt abſolute Prince in the Univerſe, if he could but prevail on a Miniſtry to joyn with him; but theſe having their Eſtates

below

below on the Continent, and conſidering that the Office of a Favourite hath a very uncertain Tenure, would never conſent to the enſlaving their Country.

IF any Town ſhould engage in Rebellion or Mutiny, fall into violent Factions, or refuſe to pay the uſual Tribute; the King hath two Methods of reducing them to Obedience. The firſt and the mildeſt Courſe is by keeping the Iſland hovering over ſuch a Town, and the Lands about it; whereby he can deprive them of the Benefit of the Sun and the Rain, and conſequently afflict the Inhabitants with Dearth and Diſeaſes. And, if the Crime deſerve it, they are at the ſame Time pelted from above with great Stones, againſt which they have no Defence, but by creeping into Cellars or Caves, while the Roofs of their Houſes are beaten to Pieces. But, if they ſtill continue obſtinate, or offer to raiſe Inſurrections; he proceeds to the laſt Remedy, by letting the Iſland drop directly upon their Heads, which makes an univerſal Deſtruction both of Houſes and Men. However, this is an Extremity to which the Prince is ſeldom driven, neither indeed is he willing to put it in Execution; nor dare his Miniſters adviſe him to an Action, which as it would render them odious, to the People, ſo it would be a great Damage to their own Eſtates that lie all below; for the Iſland is the King's Demeſne.

BUT, there is ſtill indeed a more weighty Reaſon, why the Kings of this Country have been always averſe from executing ſo terrible an Action, unleſs upon the utmoſt Neceſſity. For, if the Town intended to be deſtroyed ſhould have in it any tall Rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger Cities; a Situation probably choſen at firſt with a View to prevent

Digitized by Google

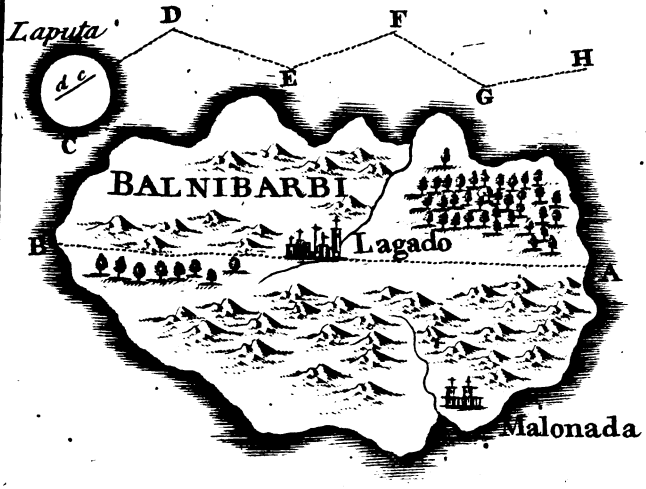
prevent ſuch a Cataſtrophe: Or, if it abound in high Spires or Pillars of Stone, a ſudden Fall might endanger the Bottom or under Surface of the Iſland, which although it conſiſts, as I have ſaid, of one entire Adamant two hundred Yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a Choque, or burſt, by approaching too near the Fires from the Houſes below; as the Backs both of Iron and Stone will often do in our Chimnies. Of all this the People are well apprized, and underſtand how far to carry their Obſtinacy, where their Liberty or Property is concerned. And the King, when he is higheſt provoked, and moſt determined to preſs a City to Rubbiſh, orders the Iſland to deſcend with great Gentleneſs, out of a Pretence of Tenderneſs to his People, but indeed for fear of breaking the Adamantine Bottom; in which Caſe it is the Opinion of all their Philoſophers, that the Load-Stone could no longer hold it up, and the whole Maſs would fall to the Ground.

BY a fundamental Law of this Realm, neither the King nor either of his two elder Sons, are permitted to leave the Iſland; nor the Queen until ſhe is paſt Child-bearing.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

The Author leaves LAPUTA, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the Metropolis. A Deſcription of the Metropolis, and the Country adjoyning. The Author hoſpitably received by a great Lord. His Converſation with that Lord.*

ALTHOUGH I cannot ſay, that I was ill treated in this Iſland, yet I muſt confeſs, I thought my ſelf too much neglected, not without ſome Degree of Contempt. For, neither Prince nor People appear to be curious in any Part of Knowledge, except Mathematicks and Muſick; wherein I was far their Inferior, and upon that Account very little regarded.

ON the other Side, after having ſeen all the Curioſities of the Iſland, I was very deſirous to leave it, being heartily weary of thoſe People. They were indeed, excellent in two Sciences, for which I have great Eſteem, and wherein I am not unverſed: but, at the ſame Time, ſo abſtracted and involved in Speculation, that I never met with ſuch diſagreeable Companions. I converſed only with Women, Tradeſmen, *Flappers*, and Court-Pages, during two Months of my Abode there; by

Digitized by Google

by which at laſt I rendered my ſelf extremely contemptible; yet theſe were the only People from whom I could ever receive a reaſonable Anſwer.

I HAD obtained by hard Study a good Degree of Knowledge in their Language: I was weary of being confined to an Iſland where I received ſo little Countenance; and reſolved to leave it with the firſt Opportunity.

THERE was a great Lord at Court, nearly related to the King, and for that Reaſon alone uſed with Reſpect. He was univerſally reckoned the moſt ignorant and ſtupid Perſon among them. He had performed many eminent Services for the Crown; had great natural and acquired Parts, adorned with Integrity and Honour; but, ſo ill an Ear for Muſick, that his Detractors reported he had been often known to beat Time in the wrong Place; neither could his Tutors, without extreme Difficulty, teach him to demonſtrate the moſt eaſy Propoſition in the Mathematicks. He was pleaſed to ſhew me many Marks of Favour; often did me the Honour of a Viſit; deſired to be informed in the Affairs of *Europe*; the Laws and Cuſtoms, the Manners and Learning of the ſeveral Countries where I had travelled. He liſtened to me with great Attention, and made very wiſe Obſervations on all I ſpoke: He had two *Flappers* attending him for State, but never made Uſe of them except at Court, and in Viſits of Ceremony; and, would always command them to withdraw, when we were alone together.

I INTREATED this illuſtrious Perſon, to intercede in my Behalf with his Majeſty for Leave to depart; which he accordingly did, as he was pleaſed to tell me, with Regret: For, indeed he had made me ſeveral Offers very advantageous; which, however

Digitized by Google

ever I refuſed with Expreſſions of the higheſt Acknowledgment.

ON the 16th Day of *February*, I took Leave of his Majeſty and the Court: The King made me a Preſent to the Value of about two hundred Pounds *Engliſh*; and my Protector his Kinſman as much more, together with a Letter of Recommendation to a Friend of his in *Lagado*, the Metropolis: The Iſland being then hovering over a Mountain about two Miles from it, I was let down from the loweſt Gallery in the ſame Manner as I had been taken up.

THE Continent, as far as it is ſubject to the Monarch of the *Flying Iſland*, paſſed under the general Name of *Balnibarbi*; and the Metropolis, as I ſaid before, is called *Lagado*. I felt ſome little Satisfaction in finding my ſelf on firm Ground. I walked to the City without any Concern, being clad like one of the Natives, and ſufficiently inſtructed to converſe with them. I ſoon found out the Perſon's Houſe to whom I was recommended; preſented my Letter, from his Friend the Grandee in the Iſland; and was received with much Kindneſs. This great Lord, whoſe Name was *Munodi*, ordered me an Apartment in his own Houſe; where I continued during my Stay, and was entertained in a moſt hoſpitable Manner.

THE next Morning after my Arrival, he took me in his Chariot to ſee the Town, which is about half the Bigneſs of *London*; but the Houſes very ſtrangely built, and moſt of them out of Repair. The People in the Streets walked faſt, looked wild, their Eyes fixed, and were generally in Rags. We paſſed through one of the Town Gates, and went about three Miles into the Country, where I ſaw many Labourers working with ſeveral Sorts of Tools

Digitized by Google

Tools in the Ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about; neither did I obſerve any Expectation either of Corn or Graſs, although the Soil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at theſe odd Appearances both in Town and Country; and, I made bold to deſire my Conductor, that he would be pleaſed to explain to me, what could be meant by ſo many buſy Heads, Hands, and Faces, both in the Streets and the Fields, becauſe I did not diſcover any good Effects they produced; but on the contrary, I never knew a Soil ſo unhappily cultivated, Houſes ſo ill contrived and ſo ruinous, or a People whoſe Countenances and Habit, expreſſed ſo much Miſery and Want.

THIS Lord *Munodi* was a Perſon of the firſt Rank, and had been ſome Years Governor of *Lagado*; but by a Cabal of Miniſters was diſcharged for Inſufficiency. However, the King treated him with Tenderneſs, as a well-meaning Man, but of a low contemptible Underſtanding.

WHEN I gave that free Cenſure of the Country and its Inhabitants, he made no further Anſwer than by telling me, that I had not been long enough among them to form a Judgment; and that the different Nations of the World had different Cuſtoms; with other common Topicks to the ſame Purpoſe. But, when he returned to his Palace, he asked me how I liked the Building, what Abſurdities I obſerved, and what Quarrel I had with the Dreſs and Looks of his Domeſticks. This he might ſafely do; becauſe every Thing about him, was magnificent, regular, and polite. I anſwered, that his Excellency's Prudence, Quality, and Fortune, had exempted him from thoſe Defects which Folly and Beggary had produced in others. He ſaid,

Digitized by Google

ſaid, if I would go with him to his Country Houſe, about twenty Miles diſtant, where his Eſtate lay, there would be more Leiſure for this Kind of Converſation. I told his Excellency, that I was entirely at his Diſpoſal; and accordingly we ſet out next Morning.

DURING our Journey, he made me obſerve the ſeveral Methods uſed by Farmers, in managing their Lands; which to me, were wholly unaccountable: For, except in ſome very few Places, I could not diſcover one Ear of Corn, or Blade of Graſs. But, in three Hours travelling, the Scene was wholly altered; we came into a moſt beautiful Country; Farmers Houſes at ſmall Diſtances, neatly built, the Fields encloſed, containing Vineyards, Corn-Grounds and Meadow: Neither do I remember to have ſeen a more delightful Proſpect. His Excellency obſerved my Countenance to clear up; he told me with a Sigh, that there his Eſtate began, and would continue the ſame until we ſhould come to his Houſe: That, his Countrymen ridiculed and deſpiſed him for managing his Affairs no better, and for ſetting ſo ill an Example to the Kingdom; which, however, was followed by very few; ſuch as were old and wilful, and weak like himſelf.

WE came at length to the Houſe, which was indeed a noble Structure, built according to the beſt Rules of ancient Architecture. The Fountains, Gardens, Walks, Avenues, and Groves, were all diſpoſed with exact Judgment and Taſte. I gave due Praiſes to every Thing I ſaw, whereof his Excellency took not the leaſt Notice until after Supper; when, there being no third Companion, he told me with a very melancholy Air, that he doubted he muſt throw down his Houſes in Town and Country, to rebuild them after the preſent Mode;

Digitized by Google

deſtroy all his Plantations, and caſt others into ſuch a Form, as modern Uſage required; and give the ſame Directions to all his Tenants, unleſs he would ſubmit to incur the Cenſure of Pride, Singularity, Affectation, Ignorance, Caprice; and perhaps, increaſe his Majeſty's Diſpleaſure.

THAT, the Admiration I appeared to be under, would ceaſe or diminiſh, when he had informed me of ſome Particulars, which probably I never heard of at Court; the People there being too much taken up in their own Speculations, to have Regard to what paſſed here below.

THE Sum of his Diſcourſe was to this Effect. That, about forty Years ago, certain Perſons went up to *Laputa*, either upon Buſineſs or Diverſion; and after five Months Continuance, came back with a very little Smattering in Mathematicks, but full of volatile Spirits, acquired in that airy Region. That, theſe Perſons upon their Return, began to diſlike the Management of every Thing below; and fell into Schemes of putting all Arts, Sciences, Languages, and Mechanicks upon a new Foot. To this End, they procured a Royal Patent, for erecting an Academy of PROJECTORS in *Lagado*: And, the Humour prevailed ſo ſtrongly among the People, that there is not a Town of any Conſequence in the Kingdom, without ſuch an Academy. In theſe Colleges, the Profeſſors contrive new Rules and Methods of Agriculture and Building, and new Inſtruments and Tools for all Trades and Manufactures; whereby, as they undertake, one Man ſhall do the Work of Ten: A Palace may be built in a Week, of Materials ſo durable, as to laſt for ever without repairing. All the Fruits of the Earth ſhall come to Maturity, at whatever Seaſon we think fit to chuſe, and encreaſe an hundred

Digitized by Google

dred fold more than they do at preſent; with innumerable other happy Propoſals. The only Inconvenience is, that none of theſe Projects are yet brought to Perfection; and, in the mean Time, the whole Country lies miſerably waſte; the Houſes in Ruins, and the People without Food or Cloaths: By all which, inſtead of being diſcouraged, they are fifty Times more violently bent upon proſecuteing their Schemes; driven equally on by Hope and Deſpair: That, as for himſelf, being not of an enterprizing Spirit, he was content to go on in the old Forms; to live in the Houſes his Anceſtors had built, and act as they did in every Part of Life without Innovation: That, ſome few other Perſons of Quality and Gentry had done the ſame; but were looked on with an Eye of Contempt and Ill-will; as Enemies to Art; ignorant, and ill Commonwealths-men; preferring their own Eaſe and Sloth before the general Improvement of their Country.

HIS Lordſhip added, that he would not by any further Particulars prevent the Pleaſure I ſhould certainly take in viewing the grand Academy, whither he was reſolved I ſhould go. He only deſired me to obſerve a ruined Building upon the Side of a Mountain about three Miles diſtant, of which he gave me this Account. That, he had a very convenient Mill within half a Mile of his Houſe, turned by a Current from a large River, and ſufficient for his own Family, as well as a great Number of his Tenants. That, about ſeven Years ago, a Club of thoſe Projectors came to him with Propoſals to deſtroy this Mill, and build another on the Side of that Mountain, on the long Ridge whereof, a long Canal muſt be cut for a Repoſitary of Water, to be conveyed up by Pipes and Engines to ſup-

Digitized by Google

ply the Mill: Becauſe, the Wind and Air upon a Height agitated the Water, and thereby, made it fitter for Motion: And, becauſe the Water deſcending down a Declivity, would turn the Mill with half the Current of a River, whoſe Courſe is more upon a Level. He ſaid, that being then not very well with the Court, and preſſed by many of his Friends, he complied with the Propoſal; and after employing an hundred Men for two Years, the Work miſcarried, the Projectors went off, laying the Blame entirely upon him; railing at him ever ſince, and putting others upon the ſame Experiment, with equal Aſſurance of Succeſs, as well as equal Diſappointment.

IN a few Days we came back to Town; and his Excellency, conſidering the bad Character he had in the Academy, would not go with me himſelf; but recommended me to a Friend of his, to bear me Company thither. My Lord was pleaſed to repreſent me as a great Admirer of Projects, and a Perſon of much Curioſity and eaſy Belief; which, indeed was not without Truth; for, I had my ſelf, been a Sort of Projector in my younger Days.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

The Author permitted to ſee the grand Academy of LAGADO. *The Academy largely deſcribed. The Arts wherein the Profeſſors employ themſelves.*

THIS Academy is not an entire ſingle Building, but a Continuation of ſeveral Houſes on both Sides of a Street; which growing waſte, was purchaſed and applied to that Uſe.

I WAS received very kindly by the Warden, and went for many Days to the Academy. Every Room hath in it one or more Projectors; and, I believe, I could not be in fewer than five hundred Rooms.

THE firſt Man I ſaw, was of a meagre Aſpect, with ſooty Hands and Face; his Hair and Beard long, ragged and ſinged in ſeveral Places. His Cloaths, Shirt, and Skin, were all of the ſame Colour: He had been eight Years upon a Project for extracting Sun-Beams out of Cucumbers; which were to be put into Vials, hermetically ſealed, and let out to warm the Air, in raw inclement Summers. He told me, he did not doubt, in eight Years more, that he ſhould be able to ſupply the Governor's Gardens

Digitized by Google

Gardens with Sun-ſhine at a reaſonable Rate; but, he complained that his Stock was low, and intreated me to give him ſomething as an Encouragement to Ingenuity, eſpecially ſince this had been a very dear Seaſon for Cucumbers: I made him a ſmall Preſent, for my Lord had furniſhed me with Money on Purpoſe; becauſe he knew their Practice of begging from all who go to ſee them.

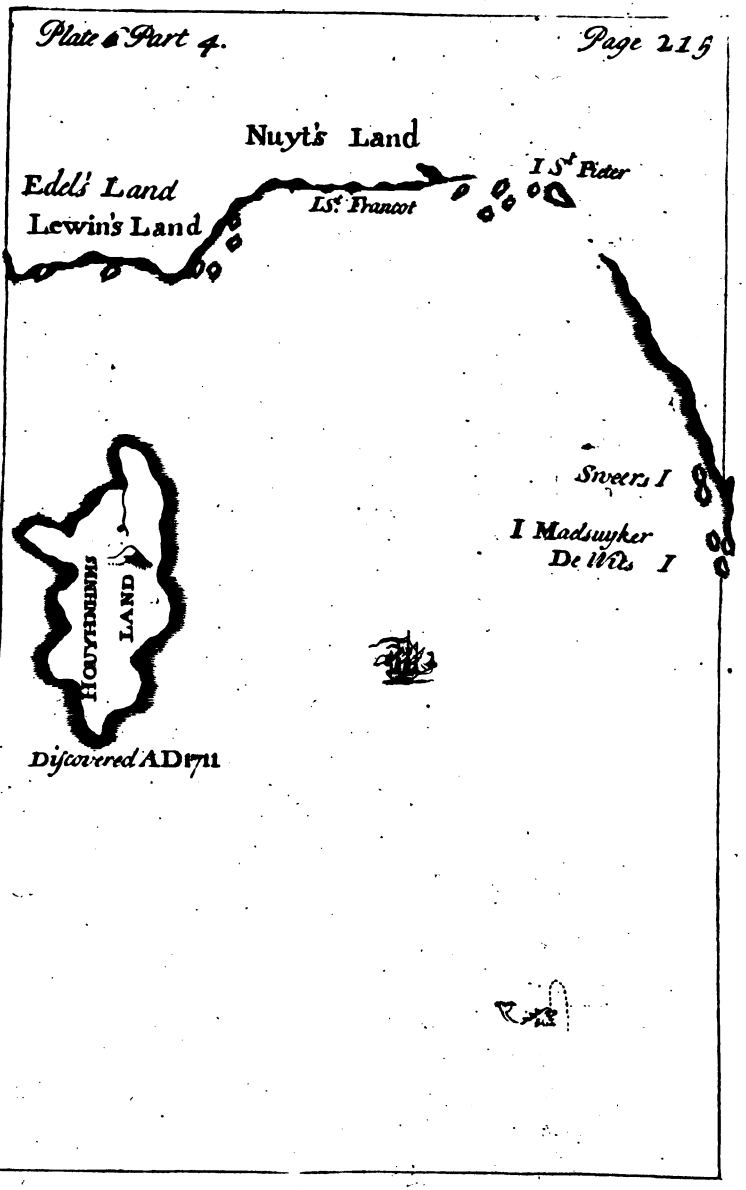
I WENT into another Chamber, but was ready to haſten back; being almoſt overcome with a horrible Stink: My Conductor preſſed me forward, conjuring me in a Whiſper to give no Offence, which would be highly reſented; and therefore, I durſt not ſo much as ſtop my Noſe. The Projector of this Cell, was the moſt ancient Student of the Academy: His Face and Beard were of a pale Yellow; his Hands and Cloaths dawbed over with Filth. When I was preſented to him, he gave me a very cloſe Embrace, (a Compliment I could well have excuſed:) His Employment from his firſt coming into the Academy; was an Operation to reduce human Excrement to its original Food; by ſeparating the ſeveral Parts; removing the Tincture which it receives from the Gall; making the Odour exhale; and ſcumming off the Saliva. He had a weekly Allowance from the Society, of a Veſſel filled with human Ordure, about the Bigneſs of a *Briſtol* Barrel.

I SAW another at work to calcine Ice into Gunpowder; who likewiſe ſhewed me a Treatiſe he had written, concerning the Malleability of Fire; which he intended to publiſh.

THERE was a moſt ingenious Architect, who had contrived a new Method for building Houſes, by beginning at the Roof, and working downwards to the Foundation; which he juſtified to me, by the like

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

like Practice of thoſe two prudent Inſects, the Bee and the Spider.

THERE was a Man born blind, who had ſeveral Apprentices in his own Condition: Their Employment was to mix Colours for Painters, which their Maſter taught them to diſtinguiſh by feeling and ſmelling: It was indeed my Misfortune to find them at that Time, not very perfect in their Leſſons; and the Profeſſor himſelf happened to be generally miſtaken. This Artiſt is much encouraged and eſteemed by the whole Fraternity.

IN another Apartment, I was highly pleaſed with a Projector, who had found a Device of plowing the Ground with Hogs, to ſave the Charges of Plows, Cattle, and Labour. The Method is this: In an Acre of Ground you bury at ſix Inches Diſtance, and eight deep, a Quantity of Acorns, Dates, Cheſnuts, and other Maſts or Vegetables, whereof theſe Animals are fondeſt; then you drive ſix hundred or more of them into the Field, where in a few Days they will root up the whole Ground in ſearch of their Food, and make it fit for ſowing, at the ſame Time manuring it with their Dung. It is true, upon Experiment, they found the Charge and Trouble very great, and they had little or no Crop. However, it is not doubted, that this Invention may be capable of great Improvement.

I WENT into another Room, where the Walls and Cieling were all hung round with Cobwebs, except a narrow Paſſage for the Artiſt to go in and out. At my Entrance, he called aloud to me not to diſturb his Webs. He lamented the fatal Miſtake the World had been ſo long in of uſing Silk-Worms, while we had ſuch Plenty of domeſtick Inſects, who infinitely excelled the former; becauſe, they underſtood how to weave as well as ſpin.

And

Digitized by Google

And he propoſed farther, that by employing Spiders, the Charge of dying Silks would be wholly ſaved; whereof I was fully convinced, when he ſhewed me a vaſt Number of Flies moſt beautifully coloured; wherewith he fed his Spiders; aſſuring us, that the Webs would take a Tincture from them; and as he had them of all Hues, he hoped to fit every Body's Fancy, as ſoon as he could find proper Food for the Flies, of certain Gums, Oyls, and other glutinous Matter, to give a Strength and Conſiſtence to the Threads.

THERE was an Aſtronomer who had undertaken to place a Sun-Dial upon the great Weather-Cock on the Town-Houſe, by adjuſting the annual and diurnal Motions of the Earth and Sun, ſo as to anſwer and coincide with all accidental Turnings of the Wind.

I WAS complaining of a ſmall Fit of the Cholick; upon which my Conductor led me into a Room, where a great Phyſician reſided, who was famous for curing that Diſeaſe by contrary Operations from the ſame Inſtrument. He had a large Pair of Bellows, with a long ſlender Muzzle of Ivory: This he conveyed eight Inches up the Anus, and drawing in the Wind, he affirmed he could make the Guts as lank as a dried Bladder. But when the Diſeaſe was more ſtubborn and violent, he let in the Muzzle while the Bellows was full of Wind, which he diſcharged into the Body of the Patient; then withdrew the Inſtrument to repleniſh it, clapping his Thumb ſtrongly againſt the Orifice of the Fundament; and this being repeated three or four Times, the adventitious Wind would ruſh out, bringing the noxious along with it (like Water put into a Pump) and the Patient recovers. I ſaw him try both Experiments upon a Dog;

Digitized by Google

Dog; but could not diſcern any Effect from the former. After the latter, the Animal was ready to burſt, and made ſo violent a Diſcharge, as was very offenſive to me and my Companions. The Dog died on the Spot, and we left the Doctor endeavouring to recover him by the ſame Operation.

I VISITED many other Apartments, but ſhall not trouble my Reader with all the Curioſities I obſerved, being ſtudious of Brevity.

I HAD hitherto only ſeen one Side of the Academy, the other being appropriated to the Advancers of ſpeculative Learning; of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I have mentioned one illuſtrious Perſon more, who is called among them, *The univerſal Artiſt*. He told us, he had been thirty Years employing his Thoughts for the Improvement of human Life. He had two large Rooms full of wonderful Curioſities, and fifty Men at work: Some were condenſing Air into a dry tangible Subſtance, by extracting the Nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid Particles percolate: Others ſoftening Marble for Pillows and Pincuſhions; others petrifying the Hoofs of a living Horſe, to preſerve them from foundering. The Artiſt himſelf, was at that Time buſy upon two great Deſigns: The firſt, to ſow Land with Chaff; wherein he affirmed the true ſeminal Virtue to be contained, as he demonſtrated by ſeveral Experiments, which I was not skilful enough to comprehend. The other was, by a certain Compoſition of Gums, Minerals, and Vegetables outwardly applied, to prevent the Growth of Wool upon two young Lambs; and he hoped in a reaſonable Time to propagate the Breed of naked Sheep all over the Kingdom.

WE croſſed a Walk to the other Part of the Academy,

Digitized by Google

Academy, where, as I have already ſaid, the Projectors in ſpeculative Learning reſided.

THE firſt Profeſſor I ſaw was in a very large Room, with forty Pupils about him. After Salutation, obſerving me to look earneſtly upon a Frame, which took up the greateſt Part of both the Length and Breadth of the Room; he ſaid, perhaps I might wonder to ſee him employed in a Project for improving ſpeculative Knowledge by practical and mechanical Operations. But the World would ſoon be ſenſible of its Uſefulneſs; and he flattered himſelf, that a more noble exalted Thought never ſprang in any other Man's Head. Every one knew how laborious the uſual Method is of attaining to Arts and Sciences; whereas by his Contrivance, the moſt ignorant Perſon at a reaſonable Charge, and with a little bodily Labour, may write Books in Philoſophy, Poetry, Politicks, Law, Mathematicks and Theology, without the leaſt Aſſiſtance from Genius or Study. He then led me to the Frame, about the Sides whereof all his Pupils ſtood in Ranks. It was twenty Foot Square, placed in the Middle of the Room. The Superficies was compoſed of ſeveral Bits of Wood, about the bigneſs of a Dye, but ſome larger than others. They were all linked together by ſlender Wires. Theſe Bits of Wood were covered on every Square with Paper paſted on them; and, on theſe Papers were written all the Words of their Language in their ſeveral Moods, Tenſes, and Declenſions, but without any Order. The Profeſſor then deſired me to obſerve, for he was going to ſet his Engine at Work. The Pupils at his Command took each of them hold of an Iron Handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the Edges of the Frame; and giving them a ſudden Turn,

Digitized by Google

Turn, the whole Diſpoſition of the Words was entirely changed. He then commanded ſix and thirty of the Lads to read the ſeveral Lines ſoftly as they appeared upon the Frame; and where they found three or four Words together that might make Part of a Sentence, they dictated to the four remaining Boys who were Scribes. This Work was repeated three or four Times, and at every Turn the Engine was ſo contrived, that the Words ſhifted into new Places, as the Square Bits of Wood moved upſide down.

SIX Hours a-Day the young Students were employed in this Labour; and the Profeſſor ſhewed me ſeveral Volumes in large Folio already collected, of broken Sentences, which he intended to piece together; and out of thoſe rich Materials to give the World a compleat Body of all Arts and Sciences; which, however might be ſtill improved, and much expedited, if the Publick would raiſe a Fund for making and employing five hundred ſuch Frames in *Lagado*, and oblige the Managers to contribute in common their ſeveral Collections.

HE aſſured me, that this Invention had employed all his Thoughts from his Youth; that he had emptied the whole Vocabulary into his Frame, and made the ſtricteſt Computation of the general Proportion there is in Books between the Numbers of Particles, Nouns, and Verbs, and other Parts of Speech.

I MADE my humbleſt Acknowledgments to this illuſtrious Perſon for his great Communicativeneſs; and promiſed, if ever I had the good Fortune to return to my native Country, that I would do him Juſtice as the ſole Inventor of this wonderful Machine; the Form and Contrivance of which I deſired Leave to delineate upon Paper as in the Figure

Digitized by Google

gure here annexed. I told him, although it were the Cuſtom of our Learned in *Europe* to ſteal Inventions from each other, who had thereby at leaſt this Advantage, that it became a Controverſy which was the right Owner; yet I would take ſuch Caution, that he ſhould have the Honour entire without a Rival.

We next went to the School of Languages, where three Profeſſors ſat in Conſultation upon improving that of their own Country.

THE firſt Project was to ſhorten Diſcourſe by cutting Polyſyllables into one, and leaving out Verbs and Participles; becauſe in Reality all Things imaginable are but Nouns.

THE other, was a Scheme for entirely abolishing all Words whatſoever: And this was urged as a great Advantage in Point of Health as well as Brevity. For, it is plain, that every Word we ſpeak is in ſome Degree a Diminution of our Lungs by Corroſion; and conſequently contributes to the ſhortning of our Lives. An Expedient was therefore offered, that ſince Words are only Names for *Things*, it would be more convenient for all Men to carry about them, ſuch *Things* as were neceſſary to expreſs the particular Buſineſs they are to diſcourſe on. And this Invention would certainly have taken Place, to the great Eaſe as well as Health of the Subject, if the Women, in Conjunction with the Vulgar and Illiterate, had not threatned to raiſe a Rebellion, unleſs they might be allowed the Liberty to ſpeak with their Tongues, after the Manner of their Forefathers: Such conſtant irreconcileable Enemies to Science are the common People. However, many of the moſt Learned and Wiſe adhere to the new Scheme of expreſſing themſelves by *Things*, which hath only this Inconvenience

Digitized by Google

venience attending it; that if a Man's Buſineſs be very great, and of various Kinds, he muſt be obliged in Proportion to carry a greater Bundle of *Things* upon his Back, unleſs he can afford one or two ſtrong Servants to attend him. I have often beheld two of thoſe Sages almoſt ſinking under the Weight of their Packs, like Pedlars among us; who when they met in the Streets would lay down their Loads, upon their Sacks, and hold Converſation for an Hour together; then put up their Implements, help each other to reſume their Burthens, and take their Leave.

BUT, for ſhort Converſations, a Man may carry Implements in his Pockets and under his Arms, enough to ſupply him, and in his Houſe he cannot be at a Loſs; therefore the Room where Company meet to practiſe this Art, is full of all *Things* ready at Hand, requiſite to furniſh Matter for this Kind of artificial Converſe.

ANOTHER great Advantage propoſed by this Invention, was, that it would ſerve as an univerſal Language to be underſtood in all civiliz'd Nations, whoſe Goods and Utenſils are generally of the ſame Kind, or nearly reſembling, ſo that their Uſes might eaſily be comprehended. And thus, Embaſſadors would be qualified to treat with foreign Princes or Miniſters of State, to whoſe Tongues they were utter Strangers.

I WAS at the Mathematical School, where the Maſter taught his Pupils after a Method ſcarce imaginable to us in *Europe*. The Propoſition and Demonſtration were fairly written on a thin Wafer with Ink compoſed of a Cephalick Tincture. This the Student was to ſwallow upon a faſting Stomach, and for three Days following eat nothing but Bread and Water. As the Wafer digeſted, the Tincture mounted

mounted to his Brain, bearing the Propoſition along with it. But the Succeſs hath not hitherto been anſwerable, partly by ſome Error in the *Quantum* or Compoſition, and partly by the Perverſeneſs of Lads; to whom this Bolus is ſo nauſeous, that they generally ſteal aſide, and diſcharge it upwards before it can operate; neither have they been yet perſuaded to uſe ſo long an Abſtinence as the Preſcription requires.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

A further Account of the Academy. The Author propoſeth ſome Improvements, which are honourably received.

IN the School of political Projectors, I was but ill entertained; the Profeſſors appearing in my Judgment wholly out of their Senſes; which is a Scene that never fails to make me melancholy. Theſe unhappy People were propoſing Schemes for perſuading Monarchs to chuſe Favourites upon the Score of their Wiſdom, Capacity and Virtue; of teaching Miniſters to conſult the publick Good; of rewarding Merit, great Abilities, and eminent Services; of inſtructing Princes to know their true Intereſt, by placing it on the ſame Foundation with that of their People: Of chuſing for Employments Perſons qualified to exerciſe them; with many other wild impoſſible Chimæras that never entered before into the Heart of Man to conceive, and confirmed in me the old Obſervation, that there is nothing ſo extravagant and irrational which ſome Philoſophers have not maintained for Truth.

BUT,

Digitized by Google

BUT, however, I shall so far do Justice to this Part of the Academy, as to acknowledge, that all of them were not so visionary. There was a most ingenious Doctor who seemed to be perfectly versed in the whole Nature and System of Government. This illustrious Person had very usefully employed his Studies in finding out effectual Remedies for all Diseases and Corruptions, to which the several Kinds of publick Administration are subject by the Vices or Infirmities of those who govern, as well as by the Licentiousness of those who are to obey. For Instance: Whereas all Writers and Reasoners have agreed, that there is a strict universal Resemblance between the natural and the political Body; can there be any thing more evident, than that the Health of both must be preserved, and the Diseases cured by the same Prescriptions? It is allowed, that Senates and great Councils are often troubled with redundant, ebulliant, and other peccant Humours; with many Diseases of the Head, and more of the Heart; with strong Convulsions, with grievous Contractions of the Nerves and Sinews in both Hands, but especially the Right: With Spleen, Flatus, Vertigoes and Deliriums; with scrophulous Tumours, full of fœtid purulent Matter; with sowre frothy Ructations; with Canine Appetites and Crudeness of Digestion; besides many others needless to mention. This Doctor therefore proposed, that upon the Meeting of a Senate, certain Physicians should attend at the three first Days of their Sitting, and at the Close of each Day's Debate, feel the Pulses of every Senator; after which, having maturely considered, and consulted upon the Nature of the several Maladies, and the Methods of Cure; they should on the fourth Day return to the Senate-House, attended by

Digitized by Google

by their Apothecaries ſtored with proper Medicines; and before the Members ſat, adminiſter to each of them Lenitives, Aperitives, Abſterſives, Corroſives, Reſtringents, Palliatives, Laxatives, Cephalalgicks, Icſtericks, Apophlegmaticks, Acauſticks, as their ſeveral Caſes required; and, according as theſe Medicines ſhould operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next Meeting.

THIS Project could not be of any great Expence to the Publick; and might, in my poor Opinion, be of much Uſe for the Diſpatch of Buſineſs in thoſe Countries, where Senates have any Share in the Legiſlative Power; beget Unanimity, ſhorten Debates, open a few Mouths which are now cloſed, and cloſe many more, which are now open; curb the Petulancy of the Young, and correct the Poſitiveneſs of the Old; rouſe the Stupid, and damp the Pert.

AGAIN; becauſe it is a general Complaint, that the Favourites of Princes are troubled with ſhort and weak Memories; the ſame Doctor propoſed, that whoever attended a firſt Miniſter, after having told his Buſineſs with the utmoſt Brevity, and in the plaineſt Words; ſhould at his Departure, give the ſaid Miniſter, a Tweak by the Noſe, or a Kick in the Belly, or tread on his Corns, or lug him thrice by both Ears, or run a Pin into his Breech, or pinch his Arm black and blue; to prevent Forgetfulneſs: And, at every Levee Day, repeat the ſame Operation, until the Buſineſs were done, or abſolutely refuſed.

HE likewiſe directed, that every Senator in the great Council of a Nation, after he had delivered his Opinion, and argued in the Defence of it, ſhould be obliged to give his Vote directly contrary;

Digitized by Google

becauſe if that were done, the Reſult would infallibly terminate in the Good of the Publick.

WHEN Parties in a State are violent, he offered a wonderful Contrivance to reconcile them: The Method is this. You take an hundred Leaders of each Party; you diſpoſe them into Couples of ſuch whoſe Heads are neareſt of a Size; then let two nice Operators ſaw off the *Occiput* of each Couple at the ſame Time, in ſuch a Manner, that the Brain may be equally divided. Let the *Occiputs* thus cut off, be interchanged, applying each to the Head of his oppoſite Party-man. It ſeems indeed to be a Work that requireth ſome Exactneſs; but the Profeſſor aſſured us, that if it were dextrouſly performed, the Cure would be infallible. For, he argued thus; that the two half Brains being left to debate the Matter between themſelves within the Space of one Scull, would ſoon come to a good Underſtanding, and produce that Moderation as well as Regularity of Thinking, ſo much to be wiſhed for in the Heads of thoſe, who imagine they came into the World only to watch and govern its Motion: And, as to the Difference of Brains in Quantity or Quality, among thoſe who are Directors in Faction, the Doctor aſſured us from his own Knowledge, that it was a perfect Trifle.

I HEARD a very warm Debate between two Profeſſors, about the moſt commodious and effectual Ways and Means of raiſing Money without grieving the Subject. The firſt affirmed, the juſteſt Method would be to lay a certain Tax upon Vices and Folly; and the Sum fixed upon every Man, to be rated after the faireſt Manner, by a Jury of his Neighbours. The ſecond was of an Opinion directly contrary; to tax thoſe Qualities of Body and Mind for which Men chiefly value themſelves; the

Rate

Digitized by Google

Rate to be more or leſs according to the Degrees of excelling; the Deciſion whereof ſhould be left entirely to their own Breaſt. The higheſt Tax was upon Men, who are the greateſt Favourites of the other Sex; and the Aſſeſſments according to the Number and Natures of the Favours they have received; for which they are allowed to be their own Vouchers. Wit, Valour, and Politeneſs were likewiſe propoſed to be largely taxed, and collected in the ſame Manner, by every Perſon giving his own Word for the Quantum of what he poſſeſſed. But, as to Honour, Juſtice, Wiſdom and Learning, they ſhould not be taxed at all; becauſe, they are Qualifications of ſo ſingular a Kind, that no Man will either allow them in his Neighbour, or value them in himſelf.

THE Women were propoſed to be taxed according to their Beauty and Skill in Dreſſing; wherein they had the ſame Privilege with the Men, to be determined by their own Judgment. But Conſtancy, Chaſtity, good Senſe, and good Nature were not rated, becauſe they would not bear the Charge of collecting.

To keep Senators in the Intereſt of the Crown, it was propoſed that the Members ſhould raffle for Employments; every Man firſt taking an Oath, and giving Security, that he would vote for the Court, whether he won or no; after which the Loſers had in their Turn the Liberty of raffling upon the next Vacancy. Thus, Hope and Expectation would be kept alive; none would complain of broken Promiſes, but impute their Diſappointments wholly to Fortune, whoſe Shoulders are broader and ſtronger than thoſe of a Miniſtry.

ANOTHER Profeſſor ſhewed me a large Paper of Inſtructions for diſcovering Plots and Conſpiracies

Digitized by Google

againſt the Government. He adviſed great Stateſmen to examine into the Diet of all ſuſpected Perſons; their Times of eating; upon which Side they lay in Bed; with which Hand they wiped their Poſteriors; to take a ſtrict View of their Excrements, and from the Colour, the Odour, the Taſte, the Conſiſtence, the Crudeneſs, or Maturity of Digeſtion, form a Judgment of their Thoughts and Deſigns: Becauſe, Men are never ſo ſerious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they are at Stool; which he found by frequent Experiment: For in ſuch Conjectures, when he uſed merely as a Trial to conſider which was the beſt Way of murdering the King, his Ordure would have a Tincture of Green; but quite different when he thought only of raiſing an Inſurrection, or burning the Metropolis.

THE whole Diſcourſe was written with great Acuteneſs, containing many Obſervations both curious and uſeful for Politicians; but, as I conceived, not altogether compleat. This I ventured to tell the Author, and offered, if he pleaſed, to ſupply him with ſome Additions. He received my Propoſition with more Compliance than is uſual among Writers, eſpecially thoſe of the Projecting Species; profeſſing he would be glad to receive farther Information.

I TOLD him, that in the Kingdom of *Tribnia*, by the Natives called *Langden*, where I had long ſojourned, the Bulk of the People conſiſted wholly of Diſcoverers, Witneſſes, Informers, Accuſers, Proſecutors, Evidences, Swearers; together with their ſeveral ſubſervient and ſubaltern Inſtruments; all under the Colours, the Conduct, and Pay of Miniſters and their Deputies. The Plots in that Kingdom are uſually the Workmanſhip of thoſe Perſons who deſire to raiſe their own Characters of profound

Digitized by Google

profound Politicians; to reſtore new Vigour to a crazy Adminiſtration; to ſtifle or divert general Diſcontents; to fill their Coffers with Forfeitures; and raiſe or ſink the Opinion of publick Credit, as either ſhall beſt anſwer their private Advantage. It is firſt agreed and ſettled among them, what ſuſpected Perſons ſhall be accuſed of a Plot: Then, effectual Care is taken to ſecure all their Letters and other Papers, and put the Owners in Chains. Theſe Papers are delivered to a Set of Artiſts very dextrous in finding out the myſterious Meanings of Words, Syllables and Letters. For Inſtance, they can decypher a Cloſe-Stool, to ſignify a Privy-Council; a Flock of Geeſe, a Senate; a lame Dog, an Invader; the Plague, a ſtanding Army; a Buzard, a Miniſter; the Gout, a High Prieſt; a Gibbet, a Secretary of State; a Chamber-Pot, a Committee of Grandees; a Sieve, a Court-Lady; a Broom, a Revolution; a Mouſe-Trap, an Employment; a bottomleſs Pit, the Treaſury; a Sink, a C—t; a Cap and Bells, a Favourite; a broken Reed, a Court of Juſtice; an empty Tun, a General; a running Sore, the Adminiſtration.

WHEN this Method fails, they have two others more effectual; which, the Learned among them call Acroſticks, and Anagrams. *Firſt*, they can decypher all initial Letters into political Meanings: Thus, *N*, ſhall ſignify a Plot; *B*, a Regiment of Horſe; *L*, a Fleet at Sea. Or, *ſecondly*, by tranſpoſing the Letters of the Alphabet, in any ſuſpected Paper, they can lay open the deepeſt Deſigns of a diſcontented Party. So, for Example, if I ſhould ſay in a Letter to a Friend, *Our Brother* Tom *hath juſt got the Piles*; a Man of Skill in this Art would diſcover how the ſame Letters which compoſe that Sentence, may be analyſed into the following

following Words; *Reſiſt*, ——— *a Plot is brought home* —— *The Tour*. And, this is the Anagrammatick Method.

THE Profeſſor made me great Acknowledgments for communicating theſe Obſervations, and promiſed to make honourable Mention of me in his Treatiſe.

I SAW nothing in this Country that could invite me to a longer Continuance; and began to think of returning home to *England*.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

The Author leaves LAGADO, *arrives at* MALDONADA. *No Ship ready. He takes a ſhort Voyage to* GLUBBDUBDRIB. *His Reception by the Governor.*

THE Continent of which this Kingdom is a Part, extends itſelf, as I have Reaſon to believe, Eaſtward to that unknown Tract of *America*, Weſtward of *California*, and North to the Pacifick Ocean, which is not above an hundred and fifty Miles from *Lagado*; where there is a good Port, and much Commerce with the great Iſland of *Luggnagg*, ſituated to the North-Weſt about 29 Degrees North Latitude, and 140 Longitude. This Iſland of *Luggnagg* ſtands South Eaſtwards of *Japan*, about an hundred Leagues diſtant. There is a ſtrict Alliance between the *Japaneſe* Emperor, and the King of *Luggnagg*, which affords frequent Opportunities of ſailing from one Iſland to the other. I determined therefore to direct my Courſe this Way, in order to my Return to *Europe*. I hired two Mules with a Guide to ſhew me the Way, and carry my ſmall Baggage. I took Leave of my noble Protector, who

Digitized by Google

who had ſhewn me ſo much Favour, and made me a generous Preſent at my Departure.

MY Journey was without any Accident or Adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the Port of *Maldonada*, (for ſo it is called) there was no Ship in the Harbour bound for *Luggnagg*, nor like to be in ſome Time. The Town is about as large as *Portſmouth*. I ſoon fell into ſome Acquaintance, and was very hoſpitably received. A Gentleman of Diſtinction ſaid to me, that ſince the Ships bound for *Luggnagg*, could not be ready in leſs than a Month, it might be no diſagreeable Amuſement for me to take a Trip to the little Iſland of *Glubbdubdrib*, about five Leagues off to the South-Weſt. He offered himſelf and a Friend to accompany me, and that I ſhould be provided with a ſmall convenient Barque for the Voyage.

GLUBBDUBDRIB, as nearly as I can interpret the Word, ſignifies the Iſland of *Sorcerers* or *Magicians*. It is about one Third as large as the Iſle of *Wight*, and extreamly fruitful: It is governed by the Head of a certain Tribe, who are all Magicians. This Tribe marries only among each other; and the eldeſt in Succeſſion is Prince or Governor. He hath a noble Palace, and a Park of about three thouſand Acres, ſurrounded by a Wall of hewn Stone twenty Foot high. In this Park are ſeveral ſmall Incloſures for Cattle, Corn and Gardening.

THE Governor and his Family are ſerved and attended by Domeſticks of a Kind ſomewhat unuſual. By his Skill in Necromancy, he hath Power of calling whom he pleaſeth from the Dead, and commanding their Service for twenty four Hours, but no longer; nor can he call the ſame Perſons

up

Digitized by Google

up again in leſs than three Months, except upon very extraordinary Occaſions.

WHEN we arrived at the Iſland, which was about Eleven in the Morning, one of the Gentlemen who accompanied me, went to the Governor, and deſired Admittance for a Stranger, who came on Purpoſe to have the Honour of attending on his Highneſs. This was immediately granted, and we all three entered the Gate of the Palace between two Rows of Guards, armed and dreſſed after a very antick Manner, and ſomething in their Countenances that made my Fleſh creep with a Horror I cannot expreſs. We paſſed through ſeveral Apartments between Servants of the ſame ſort, ranked on each Side as before, until we came to the Chamber of Preſence, where after three profound Obeyſances, and a few general Queſtions, we were permitted to ſit on three Stools near the loweſt Step of his Highneſs's Throne. He underſtood the Language of *Balnibarbi*, although it were different from that of his Iſland. He deſired me to give him ſome Account of my Travels; and to let me ſee that I ſhould be treated without Ceremony, he diſmiſſed all his Attendants with a Turn of his Finger, at which, to my great Aſtoniſhment, they vaniſhed in an Inſtant, like Viſions in a Dream, when we awake on a ſudden. I could not recover my ſelf in ſome Time, until the Governor aſſured me that I ſhould receive no Hurt, and obſerving my two Companions to be under no Concern, who had been often entertained in the ſame Manner, I began to take Courage; and related to his Highneſs a ſhort Hiſtory of my ſeveral Adventures, yet not without ſome Heſitation, and frequently looking behind me to the Place where I had ſeen thoſe domeſtick Spectres. I had the Honour to dine with the Governor,

Digitized by Google

vernor, where a new Set of Ghosts served up the Meat, and waited at Table. I now observed my self to be less terrified than I had been in the Morning. I stayed until Sun-set, but humbly desired his Highness to excuse me for not accepting his Invitation of lodging in the Palace. My two Friends and I lay at a private House in the Town adjoyning, which is the Capital of this little Island; and the next Morning we returned to pay our Duty to the Governor, as he was pleased to command us.

AFTER this Manner we continued in the Island for ten Days, most Part of every Day with the Governor, and at Night in our Lodging. I soon grew so familiarized to the Sight of Spirits, that after the third or fourth Time, they gave me no Emotion at all; or, if I had any Apprehensions left, my Curiosity prevailed over them. For his Highness the Governor ordered me to call up whatever Persons I would chuse to name, and in whatever Numbers among all the Dead from the Beginning of the World to the present Time, and command them to answer any Questions I should think fit to ask; with this Condition, that my Questions must be confined within the Compass of the Times they lived in. And one Thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell the Truth; for Lying was a Talent of no Use in the lower World.

I MADE my humble Acknowledgments to his Highness for so great a Favour. We were in a Chamber, from whence there was a fair Prospect into the Park. And, because my first Inclination was to be entertained with Scenes of Pomp and Magnificence, I desired to see *Alexander* the Great, at the Head of his Army just after the Battle of *Arbela*; which, upon a Motion of the Governor's Finger, immediately appeared in a large Field under the

Digitized by Google

the Window, where we ſtood. *Alexander* was called up into the Room: It was with great Difficulty that I underſtood his *Greek*, and had but little of my own. He aſſured me upon his Honour, that he was not poiſoned, but died of a Fever by exceſſive Drinking.

NEXT I ſaw *Hannibal* paſſing the *Alps*, who told me he had not a Drop of Vinegar in his Camp.

I SAW *Cæſar* and *Pompey* at the Head of their Troops juſt ready to engage. I ſaw the former in his laſt great Triumph. I deſired that the Senate of *Rome* might appear before me in one large Chamber, and a modern Repreſentative, in Counterview, in another. The firſt ſeemed to be an Aſſembly of Heroes and Demi-Gods; the other, a Knot of Pedlars, Pick-pockets, Highwaymen, and Bullies.

THE Governor, at my Requeſt, gave the Sign for *Cæſar* and *Brutus* to advance towards us. I was ſtruck with a profound Veneration at the Sight of *Brutus*; and could eaſily diſcover the moſt conſummate Virtue, the greateſt Intrepidity, and Firmneſs of Mind, the trueſt Love of his Country, and general Benevolence for Mankind, in every Lineament of his Countenance. I obſerved with much Pleaſure, that theſe two Perſons were in good Intelligence with each other; and *Cæſar* freely confeſſed to me, that the greateſt Actions of his own Life were not equal by many Degrees to the Glory of taking it away. I had the Honour to have much Converſation with *Brutus*; and was told, that his Anceſtor *Junius*, *Socrates*, *Epaminondas*, *Cato* the Younger, Sir *Thomas Moore*, and himſelf, were perpetually together: A *Sextumvirate* to which all the Ages of the World cannot add a Seventh.

IT

Digitized by Google

IT would be tedious to trouble the Reader with relating what vaſt Numbers of illuſtrious Perſons were called up, to gratify that inſatiable Deſire I had to ſee the World in every Period of Antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine Eyes with beholding the Deſtroyers of Tyrants and Uſurpers, and the Reſtorers of Liberty to oppreſſed and injured Nations. But, it is impoſſible to expreſs the Satisfaction I received in my own Mind, after ſuch a Manner as to make it a ſuitable Entertainment to the Reader.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

A further Account of GLUBBDUBDRIB. *Antient and Modern Hiſtory corrected.*

HAVING a Deſire to ſee thoſe Antients, who were moſt renowned for Wit and Learning, I ſet apart one Day on Purpoſe. I propoſed that *Homer* and *Ariſtotle* might appear at the Head of all their Commentators; but theſe were ſo numerous, that ſome Hundreds were forced to attend in the Court and outward Rooms of the Palace. I knew, and could diſtinguiſh thoſe two Heroes at firſt Sight, not only from the Crowd, but from each other. *Homer* was the taller and comelier Perſon of the two, walked very erect for one of his Age, and his Eyes were the moſt quick and piercing I ever beheld. *Ariſtotle* ſtooped much, and made Uſe of a Staff. His Viſage was meagre, his Hair lank and thin, and his Voice hollow. I ſoon diſcovered, that both of them were perfect Strangers to the reſt of the Company, and had never ſeen or heard of them before. And I had a Whiſper from a Ghoſt who ſhall be nameleſs, that theſe Commentators always kept in the moſt diſtant Quarters from their Principals in the lower

Digitized by Google

lower World, through a Conſciouſneſs of Shame and Guilt, becauſe they had ſo horribly miſrepreſented the Meaning of thoſe Authors to Poſterity. I introduced *Dydimus* and *Euſtathius* to *Homer*, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deſerved; for he ſoon found they wanted a Genius to enter into the Spirit of a Poet. But *Ariſtotle* was out of all Patience with the Account I gave him of *Scotus* and *Ramus*, as I preſented them to him; and he asked them whether the reſt of the Tribe were as great Dunces as themſelves.

I THEN deſired the Governor to call up *Deſcartes* and *Gaſſendi*, with whom I prevailed to explain their Syſtems to *Ariſtotle*. This great Philoſopher freely acknowledged his own Miſtakes in Natural Philoſophy, becauſe he proceeded in many Things upon Conjecture, as all Men muſt do; and he found, that *Gaſſendi*, who had made the Doctrine of *Epicurus* as palatable as he could, and the *Vortices* of *Deſcartes*, were equally exploded. He predicted the ſame Fate to *Attraction*, whereof the preſent Learned are ſuch zealous Aſſerters. He ſaid, that new Syſtems of Nature were but new Faſhions, which would vary in every Age; and even thoſe who pretend to demonſtrate them from Mathematical Principles, would flouriſh but a ſhort Period of Time, and be out of Vogue when that was determined.

I SPENT five Days in converſing with many others of the antient Learned. I ſaw moſt of the firſt *Roman* Emperors. I prevailed on the Governor to call up *Eliogabalus*'s Cooks to dreſs us a Dinner; but they could not ſhew us much of their Skill, for want of Materials. A *Helot* of *Ageſilaus* made us a Diſh of *Spartan* Broth, but I was not able to get down a ſecond Spoonful.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE two Gentlemen who conducted me to the Iſland were preſſed by their private Affairs to return in three Days, which I employed in ſeeing ſome of the modern Dead, who had made the greateſt Figure for two or three hundred Years paſt in our own and other Countries of *Europe*; and having been always a great Admirer of old illuſtrious Families, I deſired the Governor would call up a Dozen or two of Kings with their Anceſtors in order for eight or nine Generations. But my Diſappointment was grievous and unexpected. For, inſtead of a long Train with Royal Diadems, I ſaw in one Family two Fidlers, three ſpruce Courtiers, and an *Italian* Prelate. In another, a Barber, an Abbot, and two Cardinals. I have too great a Veneration for crowned Heads to dwell any longer on ſo nice a Subject: But as to Counts, Marqueſſes, Dukes, Earls, and the like, I was not ſo ſcrupulous. And, I confeſs, it was not without ſome Pleaſure that I found my ſelf able to trace the particular Features, by which certain Families are diſtinguiſhed up to their Originals. I could plainly diſcover from whence one Family derives a long Chin; why a ſecond hath abounded with Knaves for two Generations, and Fools for two more; why a Third happened to be crack-brained; and a Fourth, to be Sharpers. Whence it came, that *Polydore Virgil* ſays of a certain great Houſe, *Nec Vir fortis, nec Fœmina Caſta.* How Cruelty, Falſhood, and Cowardice grew to be Characteriſticks, by which certain Families are diſtinguiſhed as much as by their Coat of Arms. Who firſt brought the Pox into a noble Houſe, which hath lineally deſcended in ſcrophulous Tumours to their Poſterity. Neither could I wonder at all this, when I ſaw ſuch an Interruption of Lineages by Pages, Lacqueys, Valets, Coachmen,

Digitized by Google

Coachmen, Gameſters, Fidlers, Players, Captains, and Pick-Pockets.

I WAS chiefly diſguſted with modern Hiſtory. For having ſtrictly examined all the Perſons of greateſt Name in the Courts of Princes, for an hundred Years paſt, I found how the World had been miſled by proſtitute Writers, to aſcribe the greateſt Exploits in War to Cowards, the wiſeſt Counſel to Fools, Sincerity to Flatterers, *Roman* Virtue to Betrayers of their Country, Piety to Atheiſts, Chaſtity to Sodomites, Truth to Informers. How many innocent and excellent Perſons had been condemned to Death or Baniſhment by the practiſing of great Miniſters upon the Corruption of Judges, and the Malice of Factions. How many Villains had been exalted to the higheſt Places of Truſt, Power, Dignity, and Profit: How great a Share in the Motions and Events of Courts, Councils, and Senates, might be challenged by Bawds, Whores, Pimps, Paraſites, and Buffoons: How low an Opinion I had of human Wiſdom and Integrity, when I was truly informed of the Springs and Motives of great Enterprizes and Revolutions in the World, and of the contemptible Accidents to which they owed their Succeſs.

HERE I diſcovered the Roguery and Ignorance of thoſe who pretend to write *Anecdotes*, or ſecret Hiſtory; who ſent ſo many Kings to their Graves with a Cup of Poiſon; will repeat the Diſcourſe between a Prince and chief Miniſter, where no Witneſs was by; unlock the Thoughts and Cabinets of Ambaſſadors and Secretaries of State; and have the perpetual Misfortune to be miſtaken. Here I diſcovered the true Cauſes of many great Events that have ſurprized the World: How a Whore can govern the Back-Stairs, the Back-Stairs

Digitized by Google

a Council, and the Council a Senate. A General confeſſed in my Preſence, that he got a Victory purely by the Force of Cowardice and ill Conduct: And, an Admiral, that for Want of proper Intelligence, he beat the Enemy to whom he intended to betray the Fleet. Three Kings proteſted to me, that in their whole Reigns they did never once prefer any Perſon of Merit, unleſs by Miſtake or Treachery of ſome Miniſter in whom they confided: Neither would they do it, if they were to live again; and they ſhewed with great Strength of Reaſon, that the Royal Throne could not be ſupported without Corruption; becauſe, that poſitive, confident, reſtive Temper, which Virtue infuſed into Man, was a perpetual Clog to publick Buſineſs.

I HAD the Curioſity to enquire in a particular Manner, by what Method great Numbers had procured to themſelves high Titles of Honour, and prodigious Eſtates; and I confined my Enquiry to a very modern Period: However, without grating upon preſent Times, becauſe I would be ſure to give no Offence, even to Foreigners, (for I hope the Reader need not be told, that I do not in the leaſt intend my own Country, in what I ſay upon this Occaſion) A great Number of Perſons concerned were called up, and, upon a very ſlight Examination, diſcovered ſuch a Scene of Infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without ſome Seriouſneſs. Perjury, Oppreſſion, Subornation, Fraud, Pandariſm, and the like *Infirmities* were amongſt the moſt excuſeable Arts they had to mention; and for theſe I gave, as it was reaſonable, due Allowance. But, when ſome confeſſed, they owed their Greatneſs and Wealth to Sodomy or Inceſt; others to the proſtituting of their own Wives and Daughters; others to the betraying their Country or

Digitized by Google

their Prince; ſome to poiſoning, more to the perverting of Juſtice in order to deſtroy the Innocent: I hope, I may be pardoned, if theſe Diſcoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound Veneration, which I am naturally apt to pay to Perſons of high Rank, who ought to be treated with the utmoſt Reſpect due to their ſublime Dignity, by us their Inferiors.

I HAD often read of ſome great Services done to Princes and States, and deſired to ſee the Perſons by whom thoſe Services were performed. Upon Enquiry, I was told, that their Names were to be found on no Record, except a few of them, whom Hiſtory hath repreſented as the vileſt Rogues and Traitors. As to the reſt, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected Looks, and in the meaneſt Habit; moſt of them telling me they died in Poverty and Diſgrace, and the reſt on a Scaffold or a Gibbet.

AMONG others, there was one Perſon whoſe Caſe appeared a little ſingular. He had a Youth about eighteen Years old ſtanding by his Side. He told me, he had for many Years been Commander of a Ship; and in the Sea Fight at *Actium*, had the good Fortune to break through the Enemy's great Line of Battle, ſink three of their Capital Ships, and take a Fourth, which was the ſole Cauſe of *Antony*'s Flight, and of the Victory that enſued: That, the Youth ſtanding by him, his only Son, was killed in the Action. He added, that upon the Confidence of ſome Merit, the War being at an End, he went to *Rome*, and ſollicited at the Court of *Auguſtus*, to be preferred to a greater Ship, whoſe Commander had been killed; but without any regard to his Pretenſions, it was given to a Boy who had never ſeen the Sea, the Son of a *Libertina*, who

Digitized by Google

who waited on one of the Emperor's Miſtreſſes. Returning back to his own Veſſel, he was charged with Neglect of Duty, and the Ship given to a favourite Page of *Publicola* the Vice-Admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor Farm, at a great Diſtance from *Rome*, and there ended his Life. I was ſo curious to know the Truth of this Story, that I deſired *Agrippa* might be called, who was Admiral in that Fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole Account, but with much more Advantage to the Captain; whoſe Modeſty had extenuated or concealed a great Part of his Merit.

I WAS ſurprized to find Corruption grown ſo high and ſo quick in that Empire, by the Force of Luxury ſo lately introduced; which made me leſs wonder at many parallel Caſes in other Countries, where Vices of all Kinds have reigned ſo much longer, and where the whole Praiſe as well as Pillage, hath been engroſſed by the chief Commander; who, perhaps, had the leaſt Title to either.

As every Perſon called up, made exactly the ſame Appearance he had done in the World, it gave me melancholy Reflections to obſerve how much the Race of human Kind was degenerate among us, within theſe hundred Years paſt. How the Pox under all its Conſequences and Denominations had altered every Lineament of an *Engliſh* Countenance, ſhortened the Size of Bodies, unbraced the Nerves, relaxed the Sinews and Muſcles, introduced a ſallow Complexion, and rendered the Fleſh looſe and *rancid*.

I DESCENDED ſo low as to deſire that ſome *Engliſh* Yeomen of the old Stamp, might be ſummoned to appear; once ſo famous for the Simplicity of their Manners, Diet, and Dreſs; for Juſtice in their Dealings; for their true Spirit of Liberty; for

Digitized by Google

their Valour and Love of their Country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved after comparing the Living with the Dead, when I conſidered how all theſe pure native Virtues were proſtituted for a Piece of Money by their Grand-Children; who in ſelling their Votes, and managing at Elections, have acquired every Vice and Corruption that can poſſibly be learned in Court.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

The Author's Return to MALDONADA. *Sails to the Kingdom of* LUGGNAGG. *The Author confined. He is ſent for to Court. The Manner of his Admittance. The King's great Lenity to his Subjects.*

THE Day of our Departure being come, I took Leave of his Highneſs the Governor of *Glubbdubdrib*, and returned with my two Companions to *Maldonada*, where, after a Fortnight's waiting, a Ship was ready to ſail for *Luggnagg*. The two Gentlemen, and ſome others, were ſo generous and kind, as to furniſh me with Proviſions, and ſee me on Board. I was a Month in this Voyage. We had one violent Storm, and were under a Neceſſity of ſteering Weſtward to get into the Trade-Wind, which holds for above ſixty Leagues. On the 21ſt of *April*, 1708, we ſailed in the River of *Clumegnig*, which is a Sea-Port Town, at the South-Eaſt Point of *Luggnagg*. We caſt Anchor within a League of the Town, and made a Signal for a Pilot. Two of them came on Board in leſs than half an Hour, by whom we were guided

Digitized by Google

guided between certain Shoals and Rocks, which are very dangerous in the Paſſage, to a large Baſin, where a Fleet may ride in Safety within a Cable's Length of the Town Wall.

SOME of our Sailors, whether out of Treachery, or Inadvertence, had informed the Pilots that I was a Stranger, and a great Traveller, whereof theſe gave Notice to a Cuſtom-Houſe Officer, by whom I was examined very ſtrictly upon my landing. This Officer ſpoke to me in the Language of *Balnibarbi*, which by the Force of much Commerce is generally underſtood in that Town, eſpecially by Seamen, and thoſe employed in the Cuſtoms. I gave him a ſhort Account of ſome Particulars, and made my Story as plauſible and conſiſtent as I could; but I thought it neceſſary to diſguiſe my Country, and call my ſelf an *Hollander*; becauſe my Intentions were for *Japan*, and I knew the *Dutch* were the only *Europeans* permitted to enter into that Kingdom. I therefore told the Officer, that having been Shipwrecked on the Coaſt of *Balnibarbi*, and caſt on a Rock, I was received up into *Laputa*, or the flying Iſland (of which he had often heard) and was now endeavouring to get to *Japan*, from whence I might find a Convenience of returning to my own Country. The Officer ſaid, I muſt be confined until he could receive Orders from Court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an Anſwer in a Fortnight. I was carried to a convenient Lodging, with a Centry placed at the Door; however, I had the Liberty of a large Garden, and was treated with Humanity enough, being maintained all the Time at the King's Charge. I was invited by ſeveral Perſons, chiefly out of Curioſity, becauſe it was reported I

came

Digitized by Google

came from Countries very remote, of which they had never heard.

I HIRED a young Man who came in the ſame Ship to be an Interpreter; he was a Native of *Luggnagg*, but had lived ſome Years at *Maldonada*, and was a perfect Maſter of both Languages. By his Aſſiſtance, I was able to hold a Converſation with thoſe that came to viſit me; but this conſiſted only of their Queſtions and my Anſwers.

THE Diſpatch came from Court about the Time we expected. It contained a Warrant for conducting me and my Retinue to *Traldragdubb* or *Trildrogdrib*, (for it is pronounced both Ways as near as I can remember) by a Party of ten Horſe. All my Retinue was that poor Lad for an Interpreter, whom I perſuaded into my Service. At my humble Requeſt, we had each of us a Mule to ride on. A Meſſenger was diſpatched half a Day's Journey before us, to give the King Notice of my Approach, and to deſire that his Majeſty would pleaſe to appoint a Day and Hour, when it would be his gracious Pleaſure that I might have the Honour to *lick the Duſt before his Footſtool.* This is the Court Style, and I found it to be more than Matter of Form: For, upon my Admittance two Days after my Arrival, I was commanded to crawl upon my Belly, and lick the Floor as I advanced; but on Account of my being a Stranger, Care was taken to have it ſo clean, that the Duſt was not offenſive. However, this was a peculiar Grace, not allowed to any, but Perſons of the higheſt Rank, when they deſire an Admittance: Nay, ſometimes the Floor is ſtrewed with Duſt on Purpoſe, when the Perſon to be admitted happens to have powerful Enemies at Court: And I have ſeen a great Lord with his Mouth ſo crammed, that when he had crept

Digitized by Google

crept to the proper Diſtance from the Throne, he was not able to ſpeak a Word. Neither is there any Remedy, becauſe it is Capital for thoſe who receive an Audience, to ſpit or wipe their Mouths in his Majeſty's Preſence. There is indeed another Cuſtom, which I cannot altogether approve of. When the King hath a Mind to put any of his Nobles to Death in a gentle indulgent Manner; he commands to have the Floor ſtrowed with a certain brown Powder, of a deadly Compoſition, which being licked up, infallibly kills him in twenty-four Hours. But in Juſtice to this Prince's great Clemency, and the Care he hath of his Subjects Lives, (wherein it were much to be wiſhed that the Monarchs of *Europe* would imitate him) it muſt be mentioned for his Honour, that ſtrict Orders are given to have the infected Parts of the Floor well waſhed after every ſuch Execution; which, if his Domeſticks neglect, they are in Danger of incurring his Royal Diſpleaſure. I my ſelf heard him give Directions, that one of his Pages ſhould be whipt, whoſe Turn it was to give Notice about waſhing the Floor after an Execution, but maliciouſly had omitted it; by which Neglect, a young Lord, of great Hopes, coming to an Audience, was unfortunately poiſoned, although the King, at that Time, had no Deſign againſt his Life. But this good Prince was ſo gracious, as to forgive the Page his Whipping, upon Promiſe that he would do ſo no more, without Special Orders.

To return from this Digreſſion; when I had crept within four Yards of the Throne, I raiſed my ſelf gently upon my Knees, and then ſtriking my Forehead ſeven Times againſt the Ground, I pronounced the following Words, as they had been taught me the Night before, *Ickpling Glofſtrobb Squutſerumm*

Digitized by Google

Squutſerum blhiop Mlaſhnalt Zwin tnodbalkguff b Slhiophad Gurdlubb Aſht. This is the Compliment eſtabliſhed by the Laws of the Land for all Perſons admitted to the King's Preſence. It may be rendered into *Engliſh* thus: *May your cæleſtial Majeſty out-live the Sun, eleven Moons and an half.* To this the King returned ſome Anſwer, which although I could not underſtand, yet I replied as I had been directed; *Fluſt drin Yalerick Dwuldum praſtrad mirpluſh*, which properly ſignifies, *My Tongue is in the Mouth of my Friend*; and by this Expreſſion was meant, that I deſired Leave to bring my Interpreter; whereupon the young Man already mentioned, was accordingly introduced; by whoſe Intervention I anſwered as many Queſtions as his Majeſty could put in above an Hour. I ſpoke in the *Balnibarbian* Tongue, and my Interpreter delivered my Meaning in that of *Luggnagg*.

THE King was much delighted with my Company, and ordered his *Bliffmarklub*, or High Chamberlain, to appoint a Lodging in the Court for me, and my Interpreter, with a daily Allowance for my Table, and a large Purſe of Gold for my common Expences.

I STAYED three Months in this Country out of perfect Obedience to his Majeſty, who was pleaſed highly to favour me, and made me very honourable Offers. But I thought it more conſiſtent with Prudence and Juſtice to paſs the Remainder of my Days with my Wife and Family.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. X.

The LUGGNUGGIANS *commended. A particular Deſcription of the* STRULDBRUGGS, *with many Converſations between the Author and ſome eminent Perſons upon that Subject.*

THE *Luggnuggians* are a polite and generous People, and although they are not without ſome Share of that Pride which is peculiar to all *Eaſtern* Countries, yet they ſhew themſelves courteous to Strangers, eſpecially ſuch who are countenanced by the Court. I had many Acquaintance among Perſons of the beſt Faſhion; and being always attended by my Interpreter, the Converſation we had was not diſagreeable.

ONE Day in much good Company, I was aſked by a Perſon of Quality, whether I had ſeen any of their *Struldbruggs*, or *Immortals*. I ſaid I had not; and deſired he would explain to me what he meant by ſuch an Appellation, applyed to a mortal Creature. He told me, that ſometimes, although very rarely, a Child happened to be born in a Family with a red circular Spot in the Forehead, directly over the left Eye-brow, which was an infallible Mark

Digitized by Google

Mark that it ſhould never dye. The Spot, as he deſcribed it, was about the Compaſs of a Silver Threepence, but in the Courſe of Time grew larger, and changed its Colour; for at twelve Years old it became green, ſo continued until five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue; at five and forty it grew Coal-black, and as large as an *Engliſh* Shilling; but never admitted any farther Alteration. He ſaid theſe Births were ſo rare, that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred *Struldbruggs* of both Sexes in the whole Kingdom, of which he computed about fifty in the Metropolis, and among the reſt a young Girl born about three Years ago. That, theſe Productions were not peculiar to any Family, but a meer Effect of Chance; and the Children of the *Struldbruggs* themſelves, were equally mortal with the reſt of the People.

I FREELY own my ſelf to have been ſtruck with inexpreſſible Delight upon hearing this Account: And, the Perſon who gave it me happening to underſtand the *Balnibarbian* Language, which I ſpoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into Expreſſions perhaps a little too extravagant. I cryed out as in a Rapture; Happy Nation, where every Child hath at leaſt a Chance for being immortal! Happy People who enjoy ſo many living Examples of antient Virtue, and have Maſters ready to inſtruct them in the Wiſdom of all former Ages! But, happieſt beyond all Compariſon are thoſe excellent *Struldbruggs*, who being both exempt from that univerſal Calamity of human Nature, have their Minds free and diſingaged, without the Weight and Depreſſion of Spirits cauſed by the continual Apprehenſion of Death. I diſcovered my Admiration that I had not obſerved any of theſe illuſtrious

illuſtrious Perſons at Court; the black Spot on the Fore-head, being ſo remarkable a Diſtinction, that I could not have eaſily overlooked it: And it was impoſſible that his Majeſty, a moſt judicious Prince, ſhould not provide himſelf with a good Number of ſuch wiſe and able Counſellors. Yet, perhaps, the Virtue of thoſe Reverend Sages was too ſtrict for the corrupt and libertine Manners of a Court. And we often find by Experience, that young Men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the ſober Dictates of their Seniors. However, ſince the King was pleaſed to allow me Acceſs to his Royal Perſon, I was reſolved upon the very firſt Occaſion to deliver my Opinion to him on this Matter freely, and at large by the Help of my Interpreter; and whether he would pleaſe to take my Advice or no, yet in one Thing I was determined, that his Majeſty having frequently offered me an Eſtabliſhment in this Country, I would, with great Thankfulneſs accept the Favour, and paſs my Life here in the Converſation of thoſe ſuperior Beings the *Struldbruggs*, if they would pleaſe to admit me.

THE Gentleman to whom I addreſſed my Diſcourſe, becauſe (as I have already obſerved) he ſpoke the Language of *Balnibarbi*, ſaid to me with a Sort of a Smile, which uſually ariſeth from Pity to the Ignorant, that he was glad of any Occaſion to keep me among them, and deſired my Permiſſion to explain to the Company what I had ſpoke. He did ſo; and they talked together for ſome Time in their own Language, whereof I underſtood not a Syllable, neither could I obſerve by their Countenances what Impreſſion my Diſcourſe had made on them. After a ſhort Silence, the ſame Perſon told me, that his Friends and mine (ſo he thought fit to expreſs himſelf) were very much pleaſed with the judicious

Digitized by Google

judicious Remarks I had made on the great Happineſs and Advantages of immortal Life; and they were deſirous to know in a particular Manner, what Scheme of Living I ſhould have formed to my ſelf, if it had fallen to my Lot to have been born a *Struldbrugg*.

I ANSWERED, it was eaſy to be eloquent on ſo copious and delightful a Subject, eſpecially to me, who have been often apt to amuſe my ſelf with Viſions of what I ſhould do if I were a King, a General, or a great Lord: And upon this very Caſe, I had frequently run over the whole Syſtem how I ſhould employ my ſelf, and paſs the Time if I were ſure to live for ever.

THAT, if it had been my good Fortune to come into the World a *Struldbrugg*; as ſoon as I could diſcover my own Happineſs, by underſtanding the Difference between Life and Death, I would firſt reſolve by all Arts and Methods whatſoever, to procure my ſelf Riches: In the Purſuit of which, by Thrift and Management, I might reaſonably expect in about two hundred Years, to be the wealthieſt Man in the Kingdom. In the ſecond Place, I would from my earlieſt Youth, apply my ſelf to the Study of Arts and Sciences, by which I ſhould arrive in Time to excel all others in Learning. Laſtly, I would carefully record every Action and Event of Conſequence that happened in the Publick, impartially draw the Characters of the ſeveral Succeſſions of Princes, and great Miniſters of State; with my own Obſervations on every Point. I would exactly ſet down the ſeveral Changes in Cuſtoms, Languages, Faſhions, Dreſs, Dyet and Diverſions. By all which Acquirements, I ſhould be a living Treaſury of Knowledge and Wiſdom, and certainly become the Oracle of the Nation.

I WOULD

I WOULD never marry after Threescore, but live in an hospitable Manner, yet still on the saving Side. I would entertain my self in forming and directing the Minds of hopeful young Men, by convincing them from my own Remembrance, Experience and Observation, fortified by numerous Examples of the Usefulness of Virtue in publick and private Life. But, my choice and constant Companions, should be a Set of my own immortal Brotherhood; among whom I would elect a Dozen from the most ancient down to my own Contemporaries. Where any of these wanted Fortunes, I would provide them with convenient Lodges round my own Estate, and have some of them always at my Table, only mingling a few of the most valuable among you Mortals; whom Length of Time would harden me to lose with little or no Reluctance, and treat your Posterity after the same Manner: Just as a Man diverts himself with the annual Succession of Pinks and Tulips in his Garden, without regretting the Loss of those which withered the preceding Year.

These *Struldbruggs* and I would mutually communicate our Observations and Memorials through the Course of Time; remark the several Gradations by which Corruption steals into the World, and oppose it in every Step, by giving perpetual Warning and Instruction to Mankind; which, added to the strong Influence of our own Example, would probably prevent that continual Degeneracy of human Nature, so justly complained of in all Ages.

ADD to all this, the Pleasure of seeing the various Revolutions of States and Empires; the Changes in the lower and upper World; ancient Cities in Ruins, and obscure Villages become the Seats of Kings.

Digitized by Google

Kings. Famous Rivers leſſening into ſhallow Brooks; the Ocean leaving one Coaſt dry, and overwhelming another: The Diſcovery of many Countries yet unknown. Barbarity over-running the politeſt Nations, and the moſt barbarous becoming civilized. I ſhould then ſee the Diſcovery of the *Longitude*, the *perpetual Motion*, the *univerſal Medicine*, and many other great Inventions brought to the utmoſt Perfection.

WHAT wonderful Diſcoveries ſhould we make in Aſtronomy, by outliving and confirming our own Predictions; by obſerving the Progreſs and Returns of Comets, with the Changes of Motion in the Sun, Moon and Stars.

I ENLARGED upon many other Topicks, which the natural Deſire of endleſs Life and ſublunary Happineſs could eaſily furniſh me with. When I had ended, and the Sum of my Diſcourſe had been interpreted as before, to the reſt of the Company, there was a good Deal of Talk among them in the Language of the Country, not without ſome Laughter at my Expence. At laſt, the ſame Gentleman who had been my Interpreter, ſaid, he was deſired by the reſt, to ſet me right in a few Miſtakes, which I had fallen into through the common Imbecility of human Nature, and upon that Allowance was leſs anſwerable for them. That, this Breed of *Struldbruggs* was peculiar to their Country, for there were no ſuch People either in *Balnibarbi* or *Japan*, where he had the Honour to be Ambaſſador from his Majeſty, and found the Natives in both thoſe Kingdoms, very hard to believe that the Fact was poſſible; and it appeared from my Aſtoniſhment when he firſt mentioned the Matter to me, that I received it as a Thing wholly new, and ſcarcely to be credited. That, in the two Kingdoms above-mentioned,

Digitized by Google

mentioned, where during his Reſidence he had converſed very much, he obſerved long Life to be the univerſal Deſire and Wiſh of Mankind. That, whoever had one Foot in the Grave, was ſure to hold back the other as ſtrongly as he could. That, the oldeſt had ſtill Hopes of living one Day longer, and looked on Death as the greateſt Evil, from which Nature always prompted him to retreat; only in this Iſland of *Luggnagg*, the Appetite for living was not ſo eager, from the continual Example of the *Struldbruggs* before their Eyes.

THAT, the Syſtem of Living contrived by me was unreaſonable and unjuſt, becauſe it ſuppoſed a Perpetuity of Youth, Health and Vigour, which no Man could be ſo fooliſh to hope, however extravagant he might be in his Wiſhes. That, the Queſtion therefore was not whether a Man would chuſe to be always in the Prime of Youth, attended with Proſperity and Health; but how he would paſs a perpetual Life, under all the uſual Diſadvantages which old Age brings along with it. For, although few Men will avow their Deſires of being immortal upon ſuch hard Conditions, yet in the two Kingdoms beforementioned of *Balnibarbi* and *Japan*, he obſerved that every Man deſired to put off Death for ſome Time longer, let it approach ever ſo late; and he rarely heard of any Man who died willingly, except he were excited by the Extremity of Grief or Torture. And he appealed to me whether in thoſe Countries I had travelled as well as my own, I had not obſerved the ſame general Diſpoſition.

AFTER this Preface, he gave me a particular Account of the *Struldbruggs* among them. He ſaid they commonly acted like Mortals, until about thirty Years old, after which by Degrees they grew melancholy

Digitized by Google

melancholy and dejected, increasing in both until they came to Fourscore. This he learned from their own Confession; for otherwise, there not being above two or three of that Species born in an Age, they were too few to form a general Observation by. When they came to fourscore Years, which is reckoned the Extremity of living in this Country, they had not only all the Follies and Infirmities of other old Men, but many more which arose from the dreadful Prospect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peevish, covetous, morose, vain, talkative; but uncapable of Friendship, and dead to all natural Affection, which never descended below their Grand-children. Envy and impotent Desires, are their prevailing Passions. But those Objects against which their Envy seems principally directed, are the Vices of the younger Sort, and the Deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former, they find themselves cut off from all Possibility of Pleasure; and whenever they see a Funeral, they lament and repine that others are gone to a Harbour of Rest, to which they themselves never can hope to arrive. They have no Remembrance of any Thing but what they learned and observed in their Youth and middle Age, and even that is very imperfect: And for the Truth or Particulars of any Fact, it is safer to depend on common Traditions, than upon their best Recollections. The least miserable among them, appear to be those who turn to Dotage, and entirely lose their Memories; these meet with more Pity and Assistance, because they want many bad Qualities which abound in others.

If a *Struldbrugg* happen to marry one of his own Kind, the Marriage is dissolved of Course by the Courtesy of the Kingdom, as soon as the younger

of the two comes to be Fourſcore. For the Law thinks it a reaſonable Indulgence, that thoſe who are condemned without any Fault of their own, to a perpetual Continuance in the World, ſhould not have their Miſery doubled by the Load of a Wife.

As ſoon as they have compleated the Term of eighty Years, they are looked on as dead in Law; their Heirs immediately ſucceed to their Eſtates, only a ſmall Pittance is reſerved for their Support; and the poor ones are maintained at the publick Charge. After that Period, they are held incapable of any Employment of Truſt or Profit; they cannot purchaſe Lands, or take Leaſes; neither are they allowed to be Witneſſes in any Cauſe, either Civil or Criminal, not even for the Deciſion of Meers and Bounds.

AT Ninety they loſe their Teeth and Hair; they have at that Age no Diſtinction of Taſte, but eat and drink whatever they can get, without Reliſh or Appetite. The Diſeaſes they were ſubject to, ſtill continue without encreaſing or diminiſhing. In talking, they forget the common Appellation of Things, and the Names of Perſons, even of thoſe, who are their neareſt Friends and Relations. For the ſame Reaſon, they never can amuſe themſelves with reading, becauſe their Memory will not ſerve to carry them from the Beginning of a Sentence to the End; and by this Defect, they are deprived of the only Entertainment whereof they might otherwiſe be capable.

THE Language of this Country being always upon the Flux, the *Struldbruggs* of one Age, do not underſtand thoſe of another; neither are they able after two hundred Years, to hold any Converſation (farther than by a few general Words) with their Neighbours the Mortals; and thus they lye under

under the Diſadvantage of living like Foreigners in their own Country.

THIS was the Account given me of the *Struldbruggs*, as near as I can remember. I afterwards ſaw five or ſix of different Ages, the youngeſt not above two hundred Years old, who were brought to me at ſeveral Times by ſome of my Friends; but although they were told that I was a great Traveller, and had ſeen all the World, they had not the leaſt Curioſity to ask me a Queſtion; only deſired I would give them *Slumſkudaſk*, or a Token of Remembrance; which is a modeſt Way of begging, to avoid the Law that ſtrictly forbids it, becauſe they are provided for by the Publick, although, indeed, with a very ſcanty Allowance.

THEY are deſpiſed and hated by all Sorts of People: When one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their Birth is recorded very particularly; ſo that you may know their Age by conſulting the Regiſtry, which, however, hath not been kept above a thouſand Years paſt, or at leaſt, hath been deſtroyed by Time or publick Diſturbances. But the uſual Way of computing how old they are, is, by asking them what Kings or great Perſons they can remember, and then conſulting Hiſtory; for infallibly, the laſt Prince in their Mind, did not begin his Reign after they were fourſcore Years old.

THEY were the moſt mortifying Sight I ever beheld; and the Women more horrible than the Men. Beſides the uſual Deformities in extreme old Age, they acquired an additional Ghaſtlineſs in Proportion to their Number of Years, which is not to be deſcribed; and among half a Dozen I ſoon diſtinguiſhed which was the eldeſt, although there were not above a Century or two between them.

Digitized by Google

THE Reader will eaſily believe, that from what I had heard and ſeen, my keen Appetite for Perpetuity of Life was much abated. I grew heartily aſhamed of the pleaſing Viſions I had formed; and thought no Tyrant could invent a Death, into which I would not run with Pleaſure from ſuch a Life. The King heard of all that had paſſed between me and my Friends upon this Occaſion, and rallied me very pleaſantly; wiſhing I would ſend a Couple of *Struldbruggs* to my own Country, to arm our People againſt the Fear of Death; but this it ſeems is forbidden by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom; or elſe, I ſhould have been well content with the Trouble and Expence of tranſporting them.

I COULD not but agree, that the Laws of this Kingdom relating to the *Struldbruggs*, were founded upon the ſtrongeſt Reaſons, and ſuch as any other Country would be under the Neceſſity of enacting in the like Circumſtances. Otherwiſe, as Avarice is the neceſſary Conſequent of old Age, thoſe Immortals would in Time, become Proprietors of the whole Nation, and engroſs the Civil Power; which, for want of Abilities to manage, muſt end in the Ruin of the Publick.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XI.

The Author leaves LUGGNAGG, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *Ship to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* ENGLAND.

I THOUGHT this Account of the *Struldbruggs* might be ſome Entertainment to the Reader, becauſe it ſeems to be a little out of the common Way; at leaſt, I do not remember to have met the like in any Book of Travels that hath come to my Hands: And, if I am deceived, my Excuſe muſt be, that it is neceſſary for Travellers who deſcribe the ſame Country, very often to agree in dwelling on the ſame Particulars, without deſerving the Cenſure of having borrowed or tranſcribed from thoſe who wrote before them.

THERE is indeed a perpetual Commerce between this Kingdom and the great Empire of *Japan*; and it is very probable, that the *Japaneſe* Authors may have given ſome Account of the *Struldbruggs*; but my Stay in *Japan* was ſo ſhort, and I was ſo entirely a Stranger to the Language, that I was not qualified to make any Enquiries. But, I hope the *Dutch*,

Digitized by Google

Dutch, upon this Notice, will be curious and able enough to ſupply my Defects.

HIS Majeſty having often preſſed me to accept ſome Employment in his Court, and finding me abſolutely determined to return to my Native Country; was pleaſed to give me his Licence to depart; and honoured me with a Letter of Recommendation under his own Hand, to the Emperor of *Japan*. He likewiſe preſented me with four hundred forty-four large Pieces of Gold (this Nation delighting in even Numbers) and a Red Diamond, which I ſold in *England*, for eleven hundred Pounds.

ON the 6th Day of *May*, 1709, I took a ſolemn Leave of his Majeſty, and all my Friends. This Prince was ſo gracious, as to order a Guard to conduct me to *Glanguenſtald*, which is a Royal Port to the *South-Weſt* Part of the Iſland. In ſix Days I found a Veſſel ready to carry me to *Japan*; and ſpent fifteen Days in the Voyage. We landed at a ſmall Port-Town called *Xamoſchi*, ſituated on the *South-Eaſt* Part of *Japan*. The Town lies on the *Weſtern* Part, where there is a narrow Streight, leading *Northward* into a long Arm of the Sea, upon the *North-Weſt* Part of which, *Yedo* the Metropolis ſtands. At landing I ſhewed the Cuſtom-Houſe Officers my Letter from the King of *Luggnagg* to his Imperial Majeſty: They knew the Seal perfectly well; it was as broad as the Palm of my Hand. The Impreſſion was, *A King lifting up a lame Beggar from the Earth*. The Magiſtrates of the Town hearing of my Letter, received me as a publick Miniſter; they provided me with Carriages and Servants, and bore my Charges to *Yedo*, where I was admitted to an Audience, and delivered my Letter; which was opened with great Ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by an Interpreter, who

Digitized by Google

who gave me Notice of his Majeſty's Order, that I ſhould ſignify my Requeſt; and whatever it were, it ſhould be granted for the Sake of his Royal Brother of *Luggnagg*. This Interpreter was a Perſon employed to tranſact Affairs with the *Hollanders*: He ſoon conjectured by my Countenance, that I was an *European*, and therefore repeated his Majeſty's Commands in *Low-Dutch*, which he ſpoke perfectly well. I anſwered (as I had before determined) that I was a *Dutch* Merchant, ſhipwrecked in a very remote Country, from whence I travelled by Sea and Land to *Luggnagg*, and then took Shipping for *Japan*, where I knew my Countrymen often traded; and, with ſome of theſe, I hoped to get an Opportunity of returning into *Europe*: I therefore moſt humbly intreated his Royal Favour, to give Order, that I ſhould be conducted in Safety to *Nangaſac*. To this I added another Petition, that for the Sake of my Patron the King of *Luggnagg*, his Majeſty would condeſcend to excuſe my performing the Ceremony impoſed on my Countrymen, of *trampling upon the Crucifix*; becauſe I had been thrown into his Kingdom by my Misfortunes, without any Intention of trading. When this latter Petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he ſeemed a little ſurprized; and ſaid, he believed I was the firſt of my Countrymen who ever made any Scruple in this Point; and that he began to doubt, whether I were a real *Hollander* or no; but rather ſuſpected I muſt be a CHRISTIAN. However, for the Reaſons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the King of *Luggnagg*, by an uncommon Mark of his Favour, he would comply with the *ſingularity* of my Humour; but, the Affair muſt be managed with Dexterity, and his Officers ſhould be commanded to let me paſs, as it were,

Digitized by Google

were, by Forgetfulneſs. For he aſſured me, that if the Secret ſhould be diſcovered by my Countrymen, the *Dutch*, they would cut my Throat in the Voyage. I returned my Thanks, by the Interpreter, for ſo unuſual a Favour; and ſome Troops being at that Time on their March to *Nangaſac*, the Commanding Officer had Orders to convey me ſafe thither, with particular Inſtructions about the Buſineſs of the *Crucifix*.

ON the 9th Day of *June*, 1709, I arrived at *Nangaſac*, after a very long and troubleſome Journey. I ſoon fell into Company of ſome *Dutch* Sailors belonging to the *Amboyna* of *Amſterdam*, a ſtout Ship of 450 Tons. I had lived long in *Holland*, purſuing my Studies at *Leyden*, and I ſpoke *Dutch* well: The Seamen ſoon knew from whence I came laſt; they were curious to enquire into my Voyages and Courſe of Life. I made up a Story as ſhort and probable as I could, but concealed the greateſt Part. I knew many Perſons in *Holland*; I was able to invent Names for my Parents, whom I pretended to be obſcure People in the Province of *Guelderland*. I would have given the Captain (one *Theodorus Vangrult*) what he pleaſed to ask for my Voyage to *Holland*; but, underſtanding I was a Surgeon, he was contented to take half the uſual Rate, on Condition that I would ſerve him in the Way of my Calling. Before we took Shipping, I was often asked by ſome of the Crew, whether I had performed the Ceremony abovementioned? I evaded the Queſtion by general Anſwers, that I had ſatisfied the Emperor and Court in all Particulars. However, a malicious Rogue of a Skipper went to an Officer, and pointing to me, told him, I had not yet *trampled upon the Crucifix*: But the other, who had received Inſtructions to let me paſs, gave

Digitized by Google

gave the Raſcal twenty Strokes on the Shoulders with a Bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with ſuch Queſtions.

NOTHING happened worth mentioning in this Voyage. We ſailed with a fair Wind to the *Cape of Good Hope*, where we ſtaid only to take in freſh Water. On the 16th of *April* we arrived ſafe at *Amſterdam*, having loſt only three Men by Sickneſs in the Voyage, and a fourth who fell from the Fore-maſt into the Sea, not far from the Coaſt of *Guinea*. From *Amſterdam*, I ſoon after ſet ſail for *England*, in a ſmall Veſſel belonging to that City.

ON the 10th of *April*, 1710, we put in at the *Downs*. I landed the next Morning, and ſaw once more my native Country, after an Abſence of five Years and ſix Months compleat. I went ſtrait to *Redriff*, whither I arrived the ſame Day at Two in the Afternoon, and found my Wife and Family in good Health.

The End of the third Part.

Digitized by Google

TRAVELS.

PART IV.

A Voyage to the Country of the HOUYHNHNMS.

CHAP. I.

The Author ſets out as Captain of a Ship. His Men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long Time to his Cabbin, ſet him on Shore in an unknown Land. He travels up into the Country. The Yahoos, *a ſtrange Sort of Animal deſcribed. The Author meets two* Houyhnhnms.

CONTINUED at home with my Wife and Children about five Months in a very happy Condition, if I could have learned the Leſſon of knowing when I was well. I left my poor Wife big with Child, and accepted an advantageous Offer made me to be Captain of the *Adventure*, a ſtout Merchant-man of 350 Tuns: For

Digitized by Google

For I underſtood Navigation well, and being grown weary of a Surgeon's Employment at Sea, which however I could exerciſe upon Occaſion, I took a skilful young Man of that Calling, one *Robert Pureſoy*, into my Ship. We ſet ſail from *Portſmouth* upon the 7th Day of *September*, 1710; on the 14th we met with Captain *Pocock* of *Briſtol*, at *Tenariff*, who was going to the Bay of *Campeachy* to cut Logwood. On the 16th, he was parted from us by a Storm: I heard ſince my Return, that his Ship foundered, and none eſcaped, but one Cabbin-Boy. He was an honeſt Man, and a good Sailor, but a little too poſitive in his own Opinions; which was the Cauſe of his Deſtruction, as it hath been of ſeveral others. For, if he had followed my Advice, he might at this Time have been ſafe at home with his Family, as well as my ſelf.

I HAD ſeveral Men died in my Ship of Calentures, ſo that I was forced to get Recruits out of *Barbadoes*, and the *Leeward Iſlands*, where I touched by the Direction of the Merchants who employed me; which I had ſoon too much Cauſe to repent; for I found afterwards that moſt of them had been Buccaneers. I had fifty Hands on Board; and my Orders were, that I ſhould trade with the *Indians* in the *South-Sea*, and make what Diſcoveries I could. Theſe Rogues whom I had picked up, debauched my other Men, and they all formed a Conſpiracy to ſeize the Ship and ſecure me; which they did one Morning, ruſhing into my Cabbin, and binding me Hand and Foot, threatning to throw me overboard, if I offered to ſtir. I told them, I was their Priſoner, and would ſubmit. This they made me ſwear to do, and then unbound me, only faſtening one of my Legs with a Chain near my Bed; and placed a Centry at my Door with his Piece charged, who

Digitized by Google

who was commanded to ſhoot me dead, if I attempted my Liberty. They ſent me down Victuals and Drink, and took the Government of the Ship to themſelves. Their Deſign was to turn Pirates, and plunder the *Spaniards*; which they could not do, until they got more Men. But firſt, they reſolved to ſell the Goods in the Ship, and then go to *Madagaſcar* for Recruits; ſeveral among them having died ſince my Confinement. They ſailed many Weeks, and traded with the *Indians*; but I knew not what Courſe they took, being kept cloſe Priſoner in my Cabbin, and expecting nothing leſs than to be murdered, as they often threatned me.

UPON the 9th Day of *May*, 1711, one *James Welch* came down to my Cabbin; and ſaid, he had Orders from the Captain to ſet me aſhore. I expoſtulated with him, but in vain; neither would he ſo much as tell me, who their new Captain was. They forced me into the Long-boat, letting me put on my beſt Suit of Cloaths, which were as good as new, and a ſmall Bundle of Linnen, but no Arms except my Hanger; and they were ſo civil as not to ſearch my Pockets; into which I conveyed what Money I had, with ſome other little Neceſſaries. They rowed about a League; and then ſet me down on a Strand. I deſired them to tell me what Country it was: They all ſwore, they knew no more than my ſelf, but ſaid, that the Captain (as they called him) was reſolved, after they had ſold the Lading, to get rid of me in the firſt Place where they diſcovered Land. They puſhed off immediately, adviſing me to make haſte, for fear of being overtaken by the Tide; and bade me farewell.

IN this deſolate Condition, I advanced forward, and ſoon got upon firm Ground, where I ſat down on

Digitized by Google

on a Bank to reſt my ſelf, and conſider what I had beſt to do. When I was a little refreſhed, I went up into the Country, reſolving to deliver my ſelf to the firſt Savages I ſhould meet; and purchaſe my Life from them by ſome Bracelets, Glaſs Rings, and other Toys, which Sailors uſually provide themſelves with in thoſe Voyages, and whereof I had ſome about me: The Land was divided by long Rows of Trees, not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great Plenty of Graſs, and ſeveral Fields of Oats. I walked very circumſpectly for fear of being ſurprized, or ſuddenly ſhot with an Arrow from behind, or on either Side. I fell into a beaten Road, where I ſaw many Tracts of human Feet, and ſome of Cows, but moſt of Horſes. At laſt, I beheld ſeveral Animals in a Field, and one or two of the ſame Kind ſitting in Trees. Their Shape was very ſingular, and deformed, which a little diſcompoſed me, ſo that I lay down behind a Thicket to obſerve them better. Some of them coming forward near the Place where I lay, gave me an Opportunity of diſtinctly marking their Form. Their Heads and Breaſts were covered with a thick Hair, ſome frizzled and others lank; they had Beards like Goats, and a long Ridge of Hair down their Backs, and the fore Parts of their Legs and Feet; but the reſt of their Bodies were bare, ſo that I might ſee their Skins, which were of a brown Buff Colour. They had no Tails, nor any Hair at all on their Buttocks, except about the *Anus*; which, I preſume, Nature had placed there to defend them as they ſat on the Ground; for this Poſture they uſed, as well as lying down, and often ſtood on their hind Feet. They climbed high Trees as nimbly as

Digitized by Google

a Squirrel, for they had ſtrong extended Claws before and behind, terminating on ſharp Points, hooked. They would often ſpring, and bound, and leap with prodigious Agility. The Females were not ſo large as the Males; they had long lank Hair on their Heads, and only a Sort of Down on the reſt of their Bodies, except about the *Anus*, and *Pudenda*. Their Dugs hung between their fore Feet, and often reached almoſt to the Ground as they walked. The Hair of both Sexes was of ſeveral Colours, brown, red, black and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld in all my Travels, ſo diſagreeable an Animal, or one againſt which I naturally conceived ſo ſtrong an Antipathy. So, that thinking I had ſeen enough, full of Contempt and Averſion, I got up and purſued the beaten Road, hoping it might direct me to the Cabbin of ſome *Indian*. I had not gone far, when I met one of theſe Creatures full in my Way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly Monſter, when he ſaw me, diſtorted ſeveral Ways every Feature of his Viſage, and ſtared, as at an Object he had never ſeen before; then, approaching nearer, lifted up his fore Paw, whether out of Curioſity or Miſchief, I could not tell: But I drew my Hanger, and gave him a good Blow with the flat Side of it; for I durſt not ſtrike him with the Edge, fearing the Inhabitants might be provoked againſt me, if they ſhould come to know, that I had killed or maimed any of their Cattle. When the Beaſt felt the Smart, he drew back, and roared ſo loud, that a Herd, of at leaſt forty, came flocking about me from the next Field, howling and making odious Faces; but I ran to the Body of a Tree, and leaning my Back againſt it, kept them off, by waving my Hanger. Several of this curſed Brood

Brood getting hold of the Branches behind, leaped up into the Tree; from whence they began to discharge their Excrements on my Head: However, I escaped pretty well, by sticking close to the Stem of the Tree, but was almost stifled with the Filth; which fell about me on every Side.

In the Midst of this Distress, I observed them all to run away on a sudden as fast as they could; at which I ventured to leave the Tree, and pursue the Road, wondering what it was that could put them into this Fright. But looking on my left Hand, I saw a Horse walking softly in the Field; which my Persecutors having sooner discovered, was the Cause of their Flight. The Horse started a little when he came near me, but soon recovering himself, looked full in my Face with manifest Tokens of Wonder: He viewed my Hands and Feet, walking round me several Times. I would have pursued my Journey, but he placed himself directly in the Way; yet looking with a very mild Aspect, never offering the least Violence. We stood gazing at each other for some Time; at last, I took the Boldness to reach my Hand towards his Neck, with a Design to stroak it; using the common Style and Whistle of Jockies when they are going to handle a strange Horse. But, this Animal seeming to receive my Civilities with Disdain, shook his Head, and bent his Brows, softly raising up his left fore Foot to remove my Hand. Then he neighed three or four Times, but in so different a Cadence, that I almost began to think he was speaking to himself in some Language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another Horse came up; who applying himself to the first in a very formal Manner; they gently struck each others right Hoof before, neighing several Times by

Digitized by Google

by Turns, and varying the Sound, which ſeemed to be almoſt articulate. They went ſome Paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking Side by Side, backward and forward, like Perſons deliberating upon ſome Affair of Weight; but often turning their Eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not eſcape. I was amazed to ſee ſuch Actions and Behaviour in Brute Beaſts; and concluded with my ſelf, that if the Inhabitants of this Country were endued with a proportionable Degree of Reaſon, they muſt needs be the wiſeſt People upon Earth. This Thought gave me ſo much Comfort, that I reſolved to go forward until I could diſcover ſome Houſe or Village, or meet with any of the Natives; leaving the two Horſes to diſcourſe together as they pleaſed. But the firſt, who was a Dapple-Grey, obſerving me to ſteal off, neighed after me in ſo expreſſive a Tone, that I fancied my ſelf to underſtand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near him, to expect his farther Commands; but concealing my Fear as much as I could; for I began to be in ſome Pain, how this Adventure might terminate; and the Reader will eaſily believe, I did not much like my preſent Situation.

THE two Horſes came up cloſe to me, looking with great Earneſtneſs upon my Face and Hands. The grey Steed rubbed my Hat all round with his right fore Hoof, and diſcompoſed it ſo much, that I was forced to adjuſt it better, by taking it off, and ſettling it again; whereat both he and his Companion, (who was a brown Bay) appeared to be much ſurprized; the latter felt the Lappet of my Coat, and finding it to hang looſe about me, they both looked with new Signs of Wonder. He ſtroked my right Hand, ſeeming to admire the Softneſs,

Digitized by Google

Softneſs, and Colour; but he ſqueezed it ſo hard between his Hoof and his Paſtern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all poſſible Tenderneſs. They were under great Perplexity about my Shoes and Stockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and uſing various Geſtures, not unlike thoſe of a Philoſopher, when he would attempt to ſolve ſome new and difficult Phænomenon.

UPON the Whole, the Behaviour of theſe Animals was ſo orderly and rational, ſo acute and judicious, that I at laſt concluded, they muſt needs be Magicians, who had thus metamorphoſed themſelves upon ſome Deſign; and ſeeing a Stranger in the Way, were reſolved to divert themſelves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the Sight of a Man ſo very different in Habit, Feature and Complexion from thoſe who might probably live in ſo remote a Climate. Upon the Strength of this Reaſoning, I ventured to addreſs them in the following Manner: Gentlemen, if you be Conjurers, as I have good Cauſe to believe, you can underſtand any Language; therefore I make bold to let your Worſhips know, that I am a poor diſtreſſed *Engliſhman*, driven by his Misfortunes upon your Coaſt; and I entreat one of you to let me ride upon his Back, as if he were a real Horſe, to ſome Houſe or Village, where I can be relieved. In Return of which Favour, I will make you a Preſent of this Knife and Bracelet (taking them out of my Pocket.) The two Creatures ſtood ſilent while I ſpoke, ſeeming to liſten with great Attention; and, when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in ſerious Converſation. I plainly obſerved, that their Language expreſſed the Paſſions very well, and the Words might with

Digitized by Google

little Pains be reſolved into an Alphabet, more eaſily than the *Chineſe*.

I COULD frequently diſtinguiſh the Word *Yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them ſeveral Times; and, although it were impoſſible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet while the two Horſes were buſy in Converſation, I endeavoured to practiſe this Word upon my Tongue; and, as ſoon as they were ſilent, I boldly pronounced *Yahoo* in a loud Voice, imitating, at the ſame Time, as near as I could, the Neighing of a Horſe; at which they were both viſibly ſurprized, and the Grey repeated the ſame Word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right Accent, wherein I ſpoke after him as well as I could, and found my ſelf perceivably to improve every Time, although very far from any Degree of Perfection. Then the Bay tried me with a ſecond Word, much harder to be pronounced; but reducing it to the *Engliſh Orthography*, may be ſpelt thus, *Houyhnhnm*. I did not ſucceed in this ſo well as the former, but after two or three farther Trials, I had better Fortune; and they both appeared amazed at my Capacity.

AFTER ſome farther Diſcourſe, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two Friends took their Leaves, with the ſame Compliment of ſtriking each other's Hoof; and the Grey made me Signs that I ſhould walk before him; wherein, I thought it prudent to comply, until I could find a better Director. When I offered to ſlacken my Pace, he would cry *Hhuun*, *Hhuun*; I gueſſed his Meaning, and gave him to underſtand, as well as I could, that I was weary, and not able to walk faſter; upon which, he would ſtand a while to let me reſt.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his Houſe. The Houſe deſcribed. The Author's Reception. The Food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The Author in Diſtreſs for want of Meat, is at laſt relieved. His Manner of feeding in that Country.*

HAVING travelled about three Miles, we came to a long Kind of Building, made of Timber, ſtuck in the Ground, and wattled a-croſs; the Roof was low, and covered with Straw. I now began to be a little comforted; and took out ſome Toys, which Travellers uſually carry for Preſents to the Savage *Indians* of *America* and other Parts, in Hopes the People of the Houſe would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The Horſe made me a Sign to go in firſt; it was a large Room with a ſmooth Clay Floor, and a Rack and Manger extending the Whole Length on one Side. There were three Nags, and two Mares, not eating, but ſome of them ſitting down upon their Hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more, to ſee the reſt employed in domeſtick Buſineſs: The laſt ſeemed but ordinary Cattle; however, this confirmed my firſt Opinion,

Digitized by Google

that a People who could ſo far civilize brute Animals, muſt needs excel in Wiſdom all the Nations of the World. The Grey came in juſt after, and thereby prevented any ill Treatment, which the others might have given me. He neighed to them ſeveral Times in a Style of Authority, and received Anſwers.

BEYOND this Room there were three others, reaching the Length of the Houſe, to which you paſſed through three Doors, oppoſite to each other, in the Manner of a Viſta: We went through the ſecond Room towards the third; here the Grey walked in firſt, beckoning to me to attend: I waited in the ſecond Room, and got ready my Preſents for the Maſter and Miſtreſs of the Houſe: They were two Knives, three Bracelets of falſe Pearl, a ſmall Looking-glaſs, and a Bead-necklace. The Horſe neighed three or four Times, and I waited to hear ſome Anſwers in a human Voice, but I heard no other Returns than in the ſame Dialect, only one or two a little ſhriller than his. I began to think that this Houſe muſt belong to ſome Perſon of great Note among them; becauſe there appeared ſo much Ceremony before I could gain Admittance. But, that a Man of Quality ſhould be ſerved all by Horſes, was beyond my Comprehenſion. I feared my Brain was diſturbed by my Sufferings and Miſfortunes: I rouſed my ſelf, and looked about me in the Room where I was left alone; this was furniſhed as the firſt, only after a more elegant Manner. I rubbed mine Eyes often, but the ſame Objects ſtill occurred. I pinched my Arms and Sides, to awake my ſelf, hoping I might be in a Dream. I then abſolutely concluded, that all theſe Appearances could be nothing elſe but Necromancy and Magick. But, I had no Time to purſue theſe Reflections; for the

Digitized by Google

the grey Horſe came to the Door, and made me a Sign to follow him into the third Room; where I ſaw a very comely Mare, together with a Colt and Foal, ſitting on their Haunches, upon Mats of Straw, not unartfully made, and perfectly neat and clean.

THE Mare, ſoon after my Entrance, roſe from her Mat, and coming up cloſe, after having nicely obſerved my Hands and Face, gave me a moſt contemptuous Look; then turning to the Horſe, I heard the Word *Yahoo* often repeated betwixt them; the meaning of which Word I could not then comprehend, although it were the firſt I had learned to pronounce; but I was ſoon better informed, to my everlaſting Mortification: For the Horſe beckoning to me with his Head, and repeating the Word *Hhuun*, *Hhuun*, as he did upon the Road, which I underſtood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of Court, where was another Building at ſome Diſtance from the Houſe. Here we entered, and I ſaw three of thoſe deteſtable Creatures, which I firſt met after my landing, feeding upon Roots, and the Fleſh of ſome Animals, which I afterwards found to be that of Aſſes and Dogs, and now and then a Cow dead by Accident or Diſeaſe. They were all tyed by the Neck with ſtrong Wyths, faſtened to a Beam; they held their Food between the Claws of their fore Feet, and tore it with their Teeth.

THE Maſter Horſe ordered a ſorrel Nag, one of his Servants, to unty the largeſt of theſe Animals, and take him into a Yard. The Beaſt and I were brought cloſe together; and our Countenances diligently compared, both by Maſter and Servant, who thereupon repeated ſeveral Times the Word *Yahoo*. My Horror and Aſtoniſhment are not to be

be deſcribed, when I obſerved, in this abominable Animal, a perfect human Figure; the Face of it, indeed, was flat and broad, the Noſe depreſſed, the Lips large, and the Mouth wide: But theſe Differences are common to all ſavage Nations, where the Lineaments of the Countenance are diſtorted by the Natives ſuffering their Infants to lie grovelling on the Earth, or by carrying them on their Backs, nuzzling with their Face againſt the Mother's Shoulders. The Fore-feet of the *Yahoo* differed from my Hands in nothing elſe, but the Length of the Nails, the Coarſeneſs and Brownneſs of the Palms, and the Hairineſs on the Backs. There was the ſame Reſemblance between our Feet, with the ſame Differences, which I knew very well, although the Horſes did not, becauſe of my Shoes and Stockings; the ſame in every Part of our Bodies, except as to Hairineſs and Colour, which I have already deſcribed.

THE great Difficulty that ſeemed to ſtick with the two Horſes, was, to ſee the reſt of my Body ſo very different from that of a *Yahoo*, for which I was obliged to my Cloaths, whereof they had no Conception: The ſorrel Nag offered me a Root, which he held (after their Manner, as we ſhall deſcribe in its proper Place) between his Hoof and Paſtern; I took it in my Hand, and having ſmelt it, returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *Yahoo*'s Kennel a Piece of Aſs's Fleſh, but it ſmelt ſo offenſively that I turned from it with loathing; he then threw it to the *Yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured. He afterwards ſhewed me a Wiſp of Hay, and a Fettlock full of Oats; but I ſhook my Head, to ſignify, that neither of theſe were Food for me. And indeed, I now apprehended, that I muſt abſolutely ſtarve,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ſtarve, if I did not get to ſome of my own Species: For, as to thoſe filthy *Yahoos*, although there were few greater Lovers of Mankind, at that Time, than my ſelf; yet, I confeſs, I never ſaw any ſenſitive Being ſo deteſtable on all Accounts; and the more I came near them, the more hateful they grew, while I ſtayed in that Country. This the Maſter Horſe obſerved by my Behaviour, and therefore ſent the *Yahoo* back to his Kennel. He then put his Fore-hoof to his Mouth, at which I was much ſurprized, although he did it with Eaſe, and with a Motion that appeared perfectly natural; and made other Signs to know what I would eat; but I could not return him ſuch an Anſwer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had underſtood me, I did not ſee how it was poſſible to contrive any Way for finding my ſelf Nouriſhment. While we were thus engaged, I obſerved a Cow paſſing by; whereupon I pointed to her, and expreſſed a Deſire to let me go and milk her. This had its Effect; for he led me back into the Houſe, and ordered a Mare-ſervant to open a Room, where a good Store of Milk lay in earthen and wooden Veſſels, after a very orderly and cleanly Manner. She gave me a large Bowl full, of which I drank very heartily, and found my ſelf well refreſhed.

ABOUT Noon I ſaw coming towards the Houſe a Kind of Vehicle, drawn like a Sledge, by four *Yahoos*. There was in it an old Steed, who ſeemed to be of Quality; he alighted with his Hind-feet forward, having by Accident got a Hurt in his left Fore-foot. He came to dine with our Horſe, who received him with great Civility. They dined in the beſt Room, and had Oats boiled in Milk for the ſecond Courſe; which the old Horſe eat warm, but the reſt cold. Their Mangers were placed circular

cular in the Middle of the Room, and divided into ſeveral Partitions, round which they ſat on their Haunches upon Boſſes of Straw. In the Middle was a large Rack, with Angles anſwering to every Partition of the Manger. So that each Horſe and Mare eat their own Hay, and their own Maſh of Oats and Milk, with much Decency and Regularity. The Behaviour of the young Colt and Fole appeared very modeſt; and that of the Maſter and Miſtreſs extremely chearful and complaiſant to their Gueſt. The Grey ordered me to ſtand by him; and much Diſcourſe paſſed between him and his Friend concerning me, as I found by the Strangers often looking on me, and the frequent Repetition of the Word *Yahoo*.

I HAPPENED to wear my Gloves, which the Maſter Grey obſerving, ſeemed perplexed; diſcovering Signs of Wonder what I had done to my Fore-feet; he put his Hoof three or four times to them, as if he would ſignify, that I ſhould reduce them to their former Shape, which I preſently did, pulling off both my Gloves, and putting them into my Pocket. This occaſioned farther Talk, and I ſaw the Company was pleaſed with my Behaviour, whereof I ſoon found the good Effects. I was ordered to ſpeak the few Words I underſtood; and while they were at Dinner, the Maſter taught me the Names for Oats, Milk, Fire, Water, and ſome others; which I could readily pronounce after him; having from my Youth a great Facility in learning Languages.

WHEN Dinner was done, the Maſter Horſe took me aſide, and by Signs and Words made me underſtand the Concern he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their Tongue, are called *Hlunnh*. This Word I pronounced two or three Times;

Digitized by Google

Times; for although I had refuſed them at firſt, yet upon ſecond Thoughts, I conſidered that I could contrive to make of them a Kind of Bread, which might be ſufficient with Milk to keep me alive, until I could make my Eſcape to ſome other Country, and to Creatures of my own Species. The Horſe immediately ordered a white Mare-ſervant of his Family, to bring me a good Quantity of Oats in a Sort of wooden Tray. Theſe I heated before the Fire as well as I could, and rubbed them until the Huſks came off, which I made a ſhift to winnow from the Grain; I ground and beat them between two Stones, then took Water, and made them into a Paſte or Cake, which I toaſted at the Fire, and eat warm with Milk. It was at firſt a very inſipid Diet, although common enough in many Parts of *Europe*, but grew tolerable by Time; and having been often reduced to hard Fare in my Life, this was not the firſt Experiment I had made how eaſily Nature is ſatisfied. And, I cannot but obſerve, that I never had one Hour's Sickneſs, while I ſtayed in this Iſland. It is true, I ſometimes made a ſhift to catch a Rabbit, or a Bird, by Springes made of *Yahoos* Hairs; and I often gathered wholeſome Herbs, which I boiled, or eat as Salads with my Bread; and now and then, for a Rarity, I made a little Butter, and drank the Whey. I was at firſt at a great Loſs for Salt; but Cuſtom ſoon reconciled the Want of it; and I am confident, that the frequent uſe of Salt among us, is an Effect of Luxury, and was firſt introduced only as a Provocative to Drink; except where it is neceſſary for preſerving of Fleſh in long Voyages, or in Places remote from great Markets. For we obſerve no Animal to be fond of it but Man: And as to my ſelf, when I left this Country, it was a great

great while before I could endure the Taſte of it in any Thing that I eat.

THIS is enough to ſay upon the Subject of my Diet, wherewith other Travellers fill their Books, as if the Readers were perſonally concerned, whether we fare well or ill. However, it was neceſſary to mention this Matter, leſt the World ſhould think it impoſſible that I could find Suſtenance for three Years in ſuch a Country, and among ſuch Inhabitants.

WHEN it grew towards Evening, the Maſter Horſe ordered a Place for me to lodge in; it was but ſix Yards from the Houſe, and ſeparated from the Stable of the *Yahoos*. Here I got ſome Straw, and covering my ſelf with my own Cloaths, ſlept very ſound. But I was in a ſhort Time better accommodated, as the Reader ſhall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my Way of Living.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

The Author ſtudies to learn the Language, the Houyhnhnm *his Maſter aſſiſts in teaching him. The Language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of Quality come out of Curioſity to ſee the Author. He gives his Maſter a ſhort Account of his Voyage.*

MY principal Endeavour was to learn the Language, which my Maſter (for ſo I ſhall henceforth call him) and his Children, and every Servant of his Houſe, were deſirous to teach me. For, they looked upon it as a Prodigy, that a brute Animal ſhould diſcover ſuch Marks of a rational Creature. I pointed to every Thing, and enquired the Name of it, which I wrote down in my *Journal Book* when I was alone, and corrected my bad Accent, by deſiring thoſe of the Family to pronounce it often. In this Employment, a Sorrel Nag, one of the under Servants, was very ready to aſſiſt me.

IN ſpeaking, they pronounce through the Noſe and Throat, and their Language approacheth neareſt to the *High-Dutch* or *German*, of any I know in *Europe*; but is much more graceful and ſignificant. The Emperor *Charles* V. made almoſt the ſame Obſervation,

Obſervation, when he ſaid, That if he were to ſpeak to his Horſe, it ſhould be in *High-Dutch*.

THE Curioſity and Impatience of my Maſter were ſo great, that he ſpent many Hours of his Leiſure to inſtruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I muſt be a *Yahoo*, but my Teachableneſs, Civility and Cleanlineſs, aſtoniſhed him; which were Qualities altogether ſo oppoſite to thoſe Animals. He was moſt perplexed about my Cloaths, reaſoning ſometimes with himſelf, whether they were a Part of my Body; for I never pulled them off until the Family were aſleep, and got them on before they waked in the Morning. My Maſter was eager to learn from whence I came; how I acquired thoſe Appearances of Reaſon, which I diſcovered in all my Actions; and to know my Story from my own Mouth, which he hoped he ſhould ſoon do by the great Proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their Words and Sentences. To help my Memory, I formed all I learned into the *Engliſh* Alphabet, and writ the Words down with the Tranſlations. This laſt, after ſome Time, I ventured to do in my Maſter's Preſence. It coſt me much Trouble to explain to him what I was doing; for the Inhabitants have not the leaſt Idea of Books or Literature.

IN about ten Weeks Time I was able to underſtand moſt of his Queſtions; and in three Months could give him ſome tolerable Anſwers. He was extremely curious to know from what Part of the Country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational Creature; becauſe the *Yahoos*, (whom he ſaw I exactly reſembled in my Head, Hands and Face, that were only viſible,) with ſome Appearance of Cunning, and the ſtrongeſt Diſpoſition to Miſchief,

Digitized by Google

Miſchief, were obſerved to be the moſt unteachable of all Brutes. I anſwered; that I came over the Sea, from a far Place, with many others of my own Kind, in a great hollow Veſſel made of the Bodies of Trees: That, my Companions forced me to land on this Coaſt, and then left me to ſhift for my ſelf. It was with ſome Difficulty, and by the Help of many Signs, that I brought him to underſtand me. He replyed, That I muſt needs be miſtaken, or that I *ſaid the Thing which was not.* (For they have no Word in their Language to expreſs Lying or Falſhood.) He knew it was impoſſible that there could be a Country beyond the Sea, or that a Parcel of Brutes could move a wooden Veſſel whither they pleaſed upon Water. He was ſure no *Houyhnhnm* alive could make ſuch a Veſſel, or would truſt *Yahoos* to manage it.

THE Word *Houyhnhnm*, in their Tongue, ſignifies a *Horſe*; and its Etymology, *the Perfection of Nature.* I told my Maſter, that I was at a Loſs for Expreſſion, but would improve as faſt as I could; and hoped in a ſhort Time I ſhould be able to tell him Wonders: He was pleaſed to direct his own Mare, his Colt and Fole, and the Servants of the Family to take all Opportunities of inſtructing me; and every Day for two or three Hours, he was at the ſame Pains himſelf: Several Horſes and Mares of Quality in the Neighbourhood came often to our Houſe, upon the Report ſpread of a wonderful *Yahoo*, that could ſpeak like a *Houyhnhnm*, and ſeemed in his Words and Actions to diſcover ſome Glimmerings of Reaſon. Theſe delighted to converſe with me; they put many Queſtions, and received ſuch Anſwers, as I was able to return. By all which Advantages, I made ſo great a Progreſs, that in five Months from my Arrival, I underſtood

Digitized by Google

derſtood whatever was ſpoke, and could expreſs my ſelf tolerably well.

THE *Houyhnhnms* who came to viſit my Maſter, out of a Deſign of ſeeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right *Yahoo*, becauſe my Body had a different Covering from others of my Kind. They were aſtoniſhed to obſerve me without the uſual Hair or Skin, except on my Head, Face and Hands: But I diſcovered that Secret to my Maſter, upon an Accident, which happened about a Fortnight before.

I HAVE already told the Reader, that every Night when the Family were gone to Bed, it was my Cuſtom to ſtrip and cover my ſelf with my Cloaths: It happened one Morning early, that my Maſter ſent for me, by the Sorrel Nag, who was his Valet; when he came, I was faſt aſleep, my Cloaths fallen off on one Side, and my Shirt above my Waiſt. I awaked at the Noiſe he made, and obſerved him to deliver his Meſſage in ſome Diſorder; after which, he went to my Maſter, and in a great Fright gave him a very confuſed Account of what he had ſeen: This I preſently diſcovered; for going as ſoon as I was dreſſed, to pay my Attendance upon his Honour, he aſked me the Meaning of what his Servant had reported; that I was not the ſame Thing when I ſlept as I appeared to be at other Times; that his Valet aſſured him, ſome Part of me was white, ſome yellow, at leaſt not ſo white, and ſome brown.

I HAD hitherto concealed the Secret of my Dreſs, in order to diſtinguiſh my ſelf as much as poſſible, from that curſed Race of *Yahoos*; but now I found it in vain to do ſo any longer. Beſides, I conſidered that my Cloaths and Shoes would ſoon wear out, which already were in a declining Condition,

and

Digitized by Google

and must be supplied by some Contrivance from the Hides of *Yahoos*, or other Brutes; whereby the whole Secret would be known. I therefore told my Master, that in the Country from whence I came, those of my Kind always covered their Bodies with the Hairs of certain Animals prepared by Art, as well for Decency, as to avoid Inclemencies of Air both hot and cold; of which, as to my own Person, I would give him immediate Conviction, if he pleased to command me; only desiring his Excuse, if I did not expose those Parts that Nature taught us to conceal. He said, my Discourse was all very strange, but especially the last Part; for he could not understand why Nature should teach us to conceal what Nature had given. That neither himself, nor Family, were ashamed of any Parts of their Bodies; but however I might do as I pleased. Whereupon, I first unbuttoned my Coat, and pulled it off. I did the same with my Waistcoat; I drew off my Shoes, Stockings, and Breeches. I let my Shirt down to my Waist, and drew up the Bottom, fastening it like a Girdle about my Middle to hide my Nakedness.

My Master observed the whole Performance with great Signs of Curiosity and Admiration. He took up all my Cloaths in his Pastern, one Piece after another, and examined them diligently; he then stroaked my Body very gently, and looked round me several Times; after which he said, it was plain I must be a perfect *Yahoo*; but that I differed very much from the rest of my Species, in the Whiteness, and Smoothness of my Skin, my Want of Hair in several Parts of my Body, the Shape and Shortness of my Claws behind and before, and my Affectation of walking continually on my two hinder Feet. He desired to see no more;

Digitized by Google

more; and gave me Leave to put on my Cloaths again, for I was ſhuddering with Cold.

I EXPRESSED my Uneaſineſs at his giving me ſo often the Appellation of *Yahoo*, an odious Animal, for which I had ſo utter an Hatred and Contempt. I begged he would forbear applying that Word to me, and take the ſame Order in his Family, and among his Friends whom he ſuffered to ſee me. I requeſted likewiſe, that the Secret of my having a falſe Covering to my Body might be known to none but himſelf, at leaſt as long as my preſent Cloathing ſhould laſt: For, as to what the Sorrel Nag, his Valet, had obſerved, his Honour might command him to conceal it.

ALL this my Maſter very graciouſly conſented to; and thus the Secret was kept until my Cloaths began to wear out, which I was forced to ſupply by ſeveral Contrivances, that ſhall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean Time, he deſired I would go on with my utmoſt Diligence to learn their Language, becauſe he was more aſtoniſhed at my Capacity for Speech and Reaſon, than at the Figure of my Body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with ſome Impatience to hear the Wonders which I promiſed to tell him.

FROM thenceforward he doubled the Pains he had been at to inſtruct me; he brought me into all Company, and made them treat me with Civility, becauſe, as he told them privately, this would put me into good Humour, and make me more diverting.

EVERY Day when I waited on him, beſide the Trouble he was at in teaching, he would aſk me ſeveral Queſtions concerning my ſelf, which I anſwered as well as I could; and by thoſe Means he had already received ſome general Ideas, although very

Digitized by Google

very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the ſeveral Steps, by which I advanced to a more regular Converſation: But, the firſt Account I gave of my ſelf in any Order and Length, was to this Purpoſe:

THAT, I came from a very far Country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own Species; That, we travelled upon the Seas, in a great hollow Veſſel made of Wood, and larger than his Honour's Houſe. I deſcribed the Ship to him in the beſt Terms I could; and explained by the Help of my Handkerchief diſplayed, how it was driven forward by the Wind. That, upon a Quarrel among us, I was ſet on Shoar on this Coaſt, where I walked forward without knowing whither, until he delivered me from the Perſecution of thoſe execrable *Yahoos*. He aſked me, Who made the Ship, and how it was poſſible that the *Houyhnhnms* of my Country would leave it to the Management of Brutes? My Anſwer was, that I durſt proceed no farther in my Relation, unleſs he would give me his Word and Honour that he would not be offended; and then I would tell him the Wonders I had ſo often promiſed. He agreed; and I went on by aſſuring him, that the Ship was made by Creatures like my ſelf, who in all the Countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational Animals; and that upon my Arrival hither, I was as much aſtoniſhed to ſee the *Houyhnhnms* act like rational Beings, as he or his Friends could be in finding ſome Marks of Reaſon in a Creature he was pleaſed to call a *Yahoo*; to which I owned my Reſemblance in every Part, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal Nature. I ſaid farther, that if good Fortune

Digitized by Google

ever reſtored me to my native Country, to relate my Travels hither, as I reſolved to do; every Body would believe that I *ſaid the Thing which was not*; that I invented the Story out of my own Head: And with all poſſible Reſpect to himſelf, his Family, and Friends, and under his Promiſe of not being offended, our Countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a *Houyhnhnm* ſhould be the preſiding Creature of a Nation, and a *Yahoo* the Brute.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

The Houyhnhnms *Notion of Truth and Falſhood. The Author's Diſcourſe diſapproved by his Maſter. The Author gives a more particular Account of himſelf, and the Accidents of his Voyage.*

MY Maſter heard me with great Appearances of Uneaſineſs in his Countenance; becauſe *doubting* or *not believing*, are ſo little known in this Country, that the Inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themſelves under ſuch Circumſtances. And, I remember, in frequent Diſcourſes with my Maſter concerning the Nature of Manhood, in other Parts of the World; having Occaſion to talk of *Lying*, and *falſe Repreſentation*, it was with much Difficulty that he comprehended what I meant; although he had otherwiſe a moſt acute Judgment. For, he argued thus; That the Uſe of Speech was to make us underſtand one another, and to receive Information of Facts; now, if any one *ſaid the Thing which was not*, theſe Ends were defeated; becauſe, I cannot properly be ſaid to underſtand him; and, I am ſo far from receiving Information, that he leaves me worſe than in Ignorance; for I am led to believe a Thing *Black*,

Digitized by Google

when it is *White*; and *Short*, when it is *Long*. And, theſe were all the Notions he had concerning that Faculty of *Lying*, ſo perfectly well underſtood, and ſo univerſally practiſed among human Creatures.

To return from this Digreſſion; when I aſſerted that the *Yahoos* were the only governing Animals in my Country; which my Maſter ſaid was altogether paſt his Conception, he deſired to know, whether we had *Houyhnhnms* among us, and what was their Employment: I told him, we had great Numbers; that in Summer they grazed in the Fields, and in Winter were kept in Houſes, with Hay and Oats, where *Yahoo*-Servants were employed to rub their Skins ſmooth, comb their Manes, pick their Feet, ſerve them with Food, and make their Beds. I underſtand you well, ſaid my Maſter; it is now very plain from all you have ſpoken, that whatever Share of Reaſon the *Yahoos* pretend to, the *Houyhnhnms* are your Maſters; I heartily wiſh our *Yahoos* would be ſo tractable. I begged his Honour would pleaſe to excuſe me from proceeding any farther, becauſe I was very certain that the Account he expected from me would be highly diſpleaſing. But, he inſiſted in commanding me to let him know the beſt and the worſt: I told him he ſhould be obeyed. I owned, that the *Houyhnhnms* among us, whom we called *Horſes*, were the moſt generous and comely Animals we had; that they excelled in Strength and Swiftneſs; and when they belonged to Perſons of Quality, employed in Travelling, Racing, and drawing Chariots, they were treated with much Kindneſs and Care, until they fell into Diſeaſes, or became foundered in the Feet; but then they were ſold, and uſed to all Kind of Drudgery until they

Digitized by Google

they died; after which, their Skins were ſtripped and ſold for what they were worth, and their Bodies left to be devoured by Dogs and Birds of Prey. But, the common Race of Horſes had not ſo good Fortune, being kept by Farmers and Carriers, and other mean People, who put them to greater Labour, and feed them worſe. I deſcribed, as well as I could, our Way of Riding; the Shape and Uſe of a Bridle, a Saddle, a Spur, and a Whip; of Harneſs and Wheels. I added, that we faſtened Plates of a certain hard Subſtance called *Iron*, at the Bottom of their Feet, to preſerve their Hoofs from being broken by the Stony Ways on which we often travelled.

MY Maſter, after ſome Expreſſions of great Indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a *Houyhnhnm*'s Back; for he was ſure, that the meaneſt Servant in his Houſe would be able to ſhake off the ſtrongeſt *Yahoo*; or by lying down, and rolling upon his Back, ſqueeze the Brute to Death. I anſwered, That our Horſes were trained up from three or four Years old to the ſeveral Uſes we intended them for; that, if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for Carriages; that, they were ſeverely beaten while they were young for any miſchievous Tricks: That, the Males, deſigned for the common Uſe of Rideing or Draught, were generally *caſtrated* about two Years after their Birth, to take down their Spirits, and make them more tame and gentle: That, they were indeed ſenſible of Rewards and Puniſhments; but his Honour would pleaſe to conſider, that they had not the leaſt Tincture of Reaſon any more than the *Yahoos* in this Country.

IT put me to the Pains of many Circumlocutions to give my Maſter a right Idea of what I ſpoke; for

for their Language doth not abound in Variety of Words, becauſe their Wants and Paſſions are fewer than among us. But, it is impoſſible to expreſs his noble Reſentment at our ſavage Treatment of the *Houyhnhnm* Race; particularly after I had explained the Manner and Uſe of *Caſtrating* Horſes among us, to hinder them from propagating their Kind, and to render them more ſervile. He ſaid, if it were poſſible there could be any Country where *Yahoos* alone were endued with Reaſon, they certainly muſt be the governing Animal, becauſe Reaſon will in Time always prevail againſt brutal Strength. But, conſidering the Frame of our Bodies, and eſpecially of mine, he thought no Creature of equal Bulk, was ſo ill contrived for employing that Reaſon in the common Offices of Life; whereupon he deſired to know whether thoſe among whom I lived, reſembled me or the *Yahoos* of his Country. I aſſured him, that I was as well ſhaped as moſt of my Age; but the younger and the Females were much more ſoft and tender, and the Skins of the latter generally as white as Milk. He ſaid, I differed indeed from other *Yahoos*, being much more cleanly, and not altogether ſo deformed; but in Point of real Advantage, he thought I differed for the worſe: That, my Nails were of no Uſe either to my fore or hinder Feet: As to my fore Feet, he could not properly call them by that Name, for he never obſerved me to walk upon them; That, they were too ſoft to bear the Ground; That, I generally went with them uncovered, neither was the Covering I ſometimes wore on them, of the ſame Shape, or ſo ſtrong as that on my Feet behind: That, I could not walk with any Security; for if either of my hinder Feet ſlipped, I muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find Fault with other Parts

of

of my Body; the Flatneſs of my Face, the Prominence of my Noſe, mine Eyes placed directly in Front, ſo that I could not look on either Side without turning my Head; That, I was not able to feed my ſelf, without lifting one of my fore Feet to my Mouth: And, therefore, Nature had placed thoſe Joints to anſwer that Neceſſity. He knew not what could be the Uſe of thoſe ſeveral Clefts and Diviſions in my Feet behind; that theſe were too ſoft to bear the Hardneſs and Sharpneſs of Stones, without a Covering made from the Skin of ſome other Brute; That, my whole Body wanted a Fence againſt Heat and Cold, which I was forced to put on and off every Day with Tediouſneſs and Trouble. And laſtly, that he obſerved every Animal in this Country naturally to abhor the *Yahoos*, whom the weaker avoided, and the ſtronger drove from them. So that ſuppoſing us to have the Gift of Reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible to cure that natural Antipathy which every Creature diſcovered againſt us; nor conſequently, how we could tame and render them ſerviceable. However, he would (as he ſaid) debate the Matter no farther, becauſe he was more deſirous to know my own Story, the Country, where I was born, and the ſeveral Actions and Events of my Life before I came hither.

I ASSURED him, how extreamly deſirous I was that he ſhould be ſatisfied in every Point; but I doubted much, whether it would be poſſible for me to explain my ſelf on ſeveral Subjects whereof his Honour could have no Conception, becauſe I ſaw nothing in his Country to which I could reſemble them. That however, I would do my beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs my ſelf by Similitudes, humbly deſiring his Aſſiſtance when I wanted proper

Digitized by Google

proper Words; which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I SAID, my Birth was of honeſt Parents, in an Iſland called *England*, which was remote from this Country, as many Days Journey as the ſtrongeſt of his Honour's Servants could travel in the Annual Courſe of the Sun. That, I was bred a Surgeon, whoſe Trade is to cure Wounds and Hurts in the Body, got by Accident or Violence. That, my Country was governed by a Female Man, whom we called *Queen*. That, I left it to get Riches, whereby I might maintain my ſelf and Family when I ſhould return. That, in my laſt Voyage, I was Commander of the Ship, and had about fifty *Yahoos* under me, many of which died at Sea, and I was forced to ſupply them by others picked out from ſeveral Nations. That, our Ship was twice in Danger of being ſunk; the firſt Time by a great Storm, and the ſecond, by ſtriking againſt a Rock. Here my Maſter interpoſed, by aſking me, How I could perſuade Strangers out of different Countries to venture with me, after the Loſſes I had ſuſtained, and the Hazards I had run. I ſaid, they were Fellows of deſperate Fortunes, forced to fly from the Places of their Birth, on Account of their Poverty or their Crimes. Some were undone by Law Suits; others ſpent all they had in Drinking, Whoring, and Gaming; others fled for Treaſon; many for Murder, Theft, Poyſoning, Robbery, Perjury, Forgery, Coining falſe Money; for committing Rapes or Sodomy; for flying from their Colours, or deſerting the Enemy; and moſt of them had broken Priſon. None of theſe durſt return to their native Countries for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving in a Jail; and therefore were under a Neceſſity of ſeeking a Livelihood in other Places.

DURING

Digitized by Google

DURING this Diſcourſe, my Maſter was pleaſed often to interrupt me. I had made Uſe of many Circumlocutions, in deſcribing to him the Nature of the ſeveral Crimes, for which moſt of our Crew had been forced to fly their Country. This Labour took up ſeveral Days Converſation before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a Loſs to know what could be the Uſe or Neceſſity of practiſing thoſe Vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give him ſome Ideas of the Deſire of Power and Riches; of the terrible Effects of Luſt, Intemperance, Malice, and Envy. All this I was forced to define and deſcribe by putting of Caſes, and making Suppoſitions. After which, like one whoſe Imagination was ſtruck with ſomething never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up his Eyes with Amazement and Indignation. Power, Government, War, Law, Puniſhment, and a thouſand other Things, had no Terms, wherein that Language could expreſs them; which made the Difficulty almoſt inſuperable to give my Maſter any Conception of what I meant: But, being of an excellent Underſtanding, much improved by Contemplation and Converſe, he at laſt arrived at a competent Knowledge of what human Nature in our Parts of the World is capable to perform; and deſired I would give him ſome particular Account of that Land, which we call *Europe*, eſpecially of my own Country.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

The Author, at his Maſter's Commands, informs him of the State of ENGLAND. *The Cauſes of War among the Princes of* EUROPE. *The Author begins to explain the* Engliſh *Conſtitution.*

THE Reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that the following Extract of many Converſations I had with my Maſter, contains a Summary of the moſt material Points, which were diſcourſed at ſeveral Times for above two Years; his Honour often deſiring fuller Satisfaction, as I farther improved in the *Houyhnhnm* Tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole State of *Europe*; I diſcourſed of Trade and Manufactures, of Arts and Sciences; and the Anſwers I gave to all the Queſtions he made, as they aroſe upon ſeveral Subjects, were a Fund of Converſation not to be exhauſted. But, I ſhall here only ſet down the Subſtance of what paſſed between us concerning my own Country, reducing it into Order as well as I can, without any Regard to Time or other Circumſtances, while I ſtrictly adhere to Truth. My only Concern is, that I ſhall hardly be able to do Juſtice to my

my Maſter's Arguments and Expreſſions, which muſt needs ſuffer by my Want of Capacity, as well as by a Tranſlation into our barbarous *Engliſh*.

IN Obedience therefore to his Honour's Commands, I related to him the *Revolution* under the Prince of *Orange*; the long War with *France*, entered into by the ſaid Prince, and renewed by his Succeſſor the preſent QUEEN; wherein the greateſt Powers of *Chriſtendom* were engaged, and which ſtill continued: I computed, at his Requeſt, that about a Million of *Yahoos* might have been killed in the whole Progreſs of it; and perhaps a hundred or more Cities taken, and five times as many Ships burnt or ſunk.

HE aſked me what were the uſual Cauſes or Motives, that made one Country go to War with another. I anſwered they were innumerable; but I ſhould only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the Ambition of Princes, who never think they have Land or People enough to govern: Sometimes the Corruption of Miniſters, who engage their Maſter in a War, in order to ſtifle or divert the Clamour of the Subjects againſt their evil Adminiſtration. Difference in Opinions hath coſt many Millions of Lives: For Inſtance, whether *Fleſh* be *Bread*, or *Bread* be *Fleſh*: Whether the Juice of a certain *Berry* be *Blood* or *Wine*: Whether *Whiſtling* be a Vice or a Virtue: Whether it be better to *kiſs a Poſt*, or throw it into the Fire: What is the beſt Colour for a *Coat*, whether *Black*, *White*, *Red*, or *Grey*; and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*; with many more. Neither are any Wars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long Continuance, as thoſe occaſioned by difference in Opinion, eſpecially if it be in Things indifferent.

SOMETIMES

SOMETIMES the Quarrel between two Princes is to decide which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a Third of his Dominions, where neither of them pretend to any Right. Sometimes one Prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a War is entered upon, becauſe the Enemy is too *ſtrong*, and ſometimes becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our Neighbours *want* the *Things* which we *have*, or *have* the Things which we want; and we both fight, until they take ours, or give us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable Cauſe of War, to invade a Country after the People have been waſted by Famine, deſtroyed by Peſtilence, or embroiled by Factions amongſt themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into a War againſt our neareſt Ally, when one of his Towns lie convenient for us, or a Territory of Land, that would render our Dominions round and compact. If a Prince ſend Forces into a Nation, where the People are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to Death, and make Slaves of the reſt, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous Way of Living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent Practice, when one Prince deſires the Aſſiſtance of another to ſecure him againſt an Invaſion, that the Aſſiſtant, when he hath driven out the Invader, ſhould ſeize on the Dominions himſelf, and kill, impriſon, or baniſh the Prince he came to relieve. Alliance by Blood or Marriage, is a ſufficient Cauſe of War between Princes; and the nearer the Kindred is, the greater is their Diſpoſition to quarrel: *Poor* Nations are *hungry*, and *rich* Nations are *proud*; and Pride and Hunger will ever be at Variance. For theſe Reaſons, the Trade of a *Soldier* is held the moſt honourable of all others: Becauſe a *Soldier* is a *Yahoo* hired to kill in cold Blood as

Digitized by Google

as many of his own Species, who have never offended him, as poſſibly he can.

THERE is likewiſe a Kind of beggarly Prince in *Europe*, not able to make War by themſelves, who hire out their Troops to richer Nations for ſo much a Day to each Man; of which they keep three Fourths to themſelves, and it is the beſt Part of their Maintenance; ſuch are thoſe in many *Northern* Parts of *Europe*.

WHAT you have told me (ſaid my Maſter) upon the Subject of War, doth indeed diſcover moſt admirably the Effects of that Reaſon you pretend to: However, it is happy that the *Shame* is greater than the *Danger*; and that Nature hath left you utterly uncapable of doing much Miſchief: For, your Mouths lying flat with your Faces, you can hardly bite each other to any Purpoſe, unleſs by Conſent. Then, as to the Claws upon your Feet before and behind, they are ſo ſhort and tender, that one of our *Yahoos* would drive a Dozen of yours before him. And therefore, in recounting the Numbers of thoſe who have been killed in Battle, I cannot but think, that you have *ſaid the Thing which is not.*

I COULD not forbear ſhaking my Head and ſmiling a little at his Ignorance. And, being no Stranger to the Art of War, I gave him a Deſcription of Cannons, Culverines, Muſkets, Carabines, Piſtols, Bullets, Powder, Swords, Bayonets, Sieges, Retreats, Attacks, Undermines, Countermines, Bombardments, Sea-fights; Ships ſunk with a thouſand Men; twenty thouſand killed on each Side; dying Groans, Limbs flying in the Air: Smoak, Noiſe, Confuſion, trampling to Death under Horſes Feet: Flight, Purſuit, Victory: Fields ſtrewed with Carcaſes left for Food to Dogs,

Digitized by Google

Dogs, and Wolves, and Birds of Prey; Plundering, Stripping, Raviſhing, Burning and Deſtroying. And, to ſet forth the Valour of my own dear Countrymen, I aſſured him, that I had ſeen them blow up a hundred Enemies at once in a Siege, and as many in a Ship; and beheld the dead Bodies drop down in Pieces from the Clouds, to the great Diverſion of all the Spectators.

I WAS going on to more Particulars, when my Maſter commanded me Silence. He ſaid, whoever underſtood the Nature of *Yahoos*, might eaſily believe it poſſible for ſo vile an Animal, to be capable of every Action I had named, if their Strength and Cunning equalled their Malice. But, as my Diſcourſe had increaſed the Abhorrence of the whole Species, ſo he found it gave him a Diſturbance in his Mind, to which he was wholly a Stranger before. He thought his Ears being uſed to ſuch abominable Words, might by Degrees admit them with leſs Deteſtation. That, although he hated the *Yahoos* of this Country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious Qualities, than he did a *Gnnayh* (a Bird of Prey) for its Cruelty, or a ſharp Stone for cutting his Hoof. But, when a Creature pretending to Reaſon, could be capable of ſuch Enormities, he dreaded, leſt the Corruption of that Faculty, might be worſe than Brutality itſelf. He ſeemed therefore confident, that inſtead of Reaſon, we were only poſſeſſed of ſome Quality fitted to increaſe our natural Vices; as the Reflection from a troubled Stream, returns the Image of an ill-ſhapen Body, not only *large*, but more *diſtorted*.

HE added, That he had heard too much upon the Subject of War, both in this, and ſome former Diſcourſes. There was another Point which a little

Digitized by Google

little perplexed him at preſent. I had ſaid, that ſome of our Crew left their Country on Account of being ruined by *Law:* That, I had already explained the Meaning of the Word; but he was at a Loſs how it ſhould come to paſs, that the *Law* which was intended for *every* Man's Preſervation, ſhould be any Man's Ruin. Therefore, he deſired to be farther ſatisfied what I meant by *Law*, and the Diſpenſers thereof, according to the preſent Practice in my own Country: Becauſe he thought, Nature and Reaſon were ſufficient Guides for a reaſonable Animal, as we pretended to be, in ſhewing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I ASSURED his Honour, that *Law* was a Science wherein I had not much converſed, further than by employing Advocates, in vain, upon ſome Injuſtices that had been done me. However, I would give him all the Satisfaction I was able.

I SAID, there was a Society of Men among us, bred up from their Youth in the Art of proving, by Words multiplied for the Purpoſe, that *White* is *Black*, and *Black* is *White*, according as they are paid. To this Society all the reſt of the People are Slaves.

FOR Example, if my Neighbour hath a Mind to my *Cow*, he hireth a Lawyer to prove that he ought to have my *Cow* from me. I muſt then hire another to defend my Right; it being againſt all Rules of *Law* that any Man ſhould be allowed to ſpeak for himſelf. Now, in this Caſe, I who am the true Owner, lie under two great Diſadvantages. Firſt, my Lawyer being practiſed almoſt from his Cradle in defending Falſhood; is quite out of his Element when he would be an Advocate for Juſtice, which as an Office unnatural, he always attempts with great Aukwardneſs, if not with Ill-will.

The

Digitized by Google

The ſecond Diſadvantage is, that my Lawyer muſt proceed with great Caution: Or elſe, he will be reprimanded by the Judges, and abhorred by his Brethren, as one who would leſſen the Practice of the Law. And therefore, I have but two Methods to preſerve my *Cow*. The firſt is, to gain over my Adverſary's Lawyer with a double Fee; who will then betray his Client, by inſinuating that he hath Juſtice on his Side. The ſecond Way is, for my Lawyer to make my Cauſe appear as unjuſt as he can; by allowing the *Cow* to belong to my Adverſary; and this, if it be ſkilfully done, will certainly beſpeak the Favour of the Bench.

Now, your Honour is to know, that theſe Judges are Perſons appointed to decide all Controverſies of Property, as well as for the Tryal of Criminals; and picked out from the moſt dextrous Lawyers, who are grown old or lazy: And, having been byaſſed all their Lives againſt Truth and Equity, lie under ſuch a fatal Neceſſity of favouring Fraud, Perjury and Oppreſſion; that I have known ſome of them to have refuſed a large Bribe from the Side where Juſtice lay, rather than injure the *Faculty*, by doing any Thing unbecoming their Nature or their Office.

IT is a Maxim among theſe Lawyers, that whatever hath been done before, may legally be done again: And, therefore they take ſpecial Care to record all the Deciſions formerly made againſt common Juſtice, and the general Reaſon of Mankind. Theſe, under the Name of *Precedents*, they produce as Authorities to juſtify the moſt iniquitous Opinions; and the Judges never fail of directing accordingly.

IN pleading, they ſtudiouſly avoid entering into the *Merits* of the Cauſe; but are loud, violent and tedious

Digitized by Google

tedious in dwelling upon all *Circumſtances* which are not to the Purpoſe. For Inſtance, in the Caſe already mentioned: They never deſire to know what Claim or Title my Adverſary hath to my *Cow*; but whether the ſaid *Cow* were red or black; her Horns long or ſhort; whether the Field I graze her in be round or ſquare; whether ſhe were milked at home or abroad; what Diſeaſes ſhe is ſubject to, and the like. After which, they conſult *Precedents*, adjourn the Cauſe, from Time to Time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty Years come to an Iſſue.

IT is likewiſe to be obſerved, that this Society hath a peculiar Cant and Jargon of their own, that no other Mortal can underſtand, and wherein all their Laws are written, which they take ſpecial Care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very Eſſence of Truth and Falſhood, of Right and Wrong; ſo that it will take thirty Years to decide whether the Field, left me by my Anceſtors for ſix Generations, belong to me, or to a Stranger three hundred Miles off.

IN the Tryal of Perſons accuſed for Crimes againſt the State, the Method is much more ſhort and commendable: The Judge firſt ſends to ſound the Diſpoſition of thoſe in Power; after which he can eaſily hang or ſave the Criminal, ſtrictly preſerving all the Forms of Law.

HERE my Maſter interpoſing, ſaid it was a Pity, that Creatures endowed with ſuch prodigious Abilities of Mind as theſe Lawyers, by the Deſcription I gave of them, muſt certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be Inſtructors of others in Wiſdom and Knowledge. In Anſwer to which, I aſſured his Honour, that in all Points out of their own Trade, they were uſually the moſt ig-

Digitized by Google

norant and ſtupid Generation among us, the moſt deſpicable in common Converſation, avowed Enemies to all Knowledge and Learning; and equally diſpoſed to pervert the general Reaſon of Mankind, in every other Subject of Diſcourſe, as in that of their own Profeſſion.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

A Continuation of the State of ENGLAND, *under Queen* ANNE. *The Character of a firſt Miniſter in the Courts of* EUROPE.

MY Maſter was yet wholly at a Loſs to underſtand what Motives could incite this Race of Lawyers to perplex, diſquiet, and weary themſelves by engaging in a Confederacy of Injuſtice, merely for the Sake of injuring their Fellow-Animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in ſaying they did it for *Hire*. Whereupon I was at much Pains to deſcribe to him the Uſe of *Money*, the Materials it was made of, and the Value of the Metals: That, when a *Yahoo* had got a great Store of this precious Subſtance, he was able to purchaſe whatever he had a Mind to; the fineſt Cloathing, the nobleſt Houſes, great Tracts of Land, the moſt coſtly Meats and Drinks; and have his Choice of the moſt beautiful Females. Therefore, ſince *Money* alone was able to perform all theſe Feats, our *Yahoos* thought, they could never have enough of it to ſpend or to ſave, as

Digitized by Google

they found themſelves inclined from their natural Bent either to Profuſion or Avarice. That, the rich Man enjoyed the Fruit of the poor Man's Labour, and the latter were a thouſand to one in Proportion to the former. That, the Bulk of our People was forced to live miſerably, by labouring every Day for ſmall Wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged my ſelf much on theſe and many other Particulars to the ſame Purpoſe: But his Honour was ſtill to ſeek: For he went upon a Suppoſition, that all Animals had a Title to their Share in the Productions of the Earth; and eſpecially thoſe who preſided over the reſt. Therefore, he deſired I would let him know what theſe coſtly Meats were, and how any of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many Sorts as came into my Head, with the various Methods of dreſſing them, which could not be done without ſending Veſſels by Sea to every Part of the World, as well for Liquors to drink, as for Sauces, and innumerable other Conveniencies. I aſſured him, that this whole Globe of Earth muſt be at leaſt three Times gone round, before one of our better Female *Yahoos* could get her Breakfaſt, or a Cup to put it in. He ſaid, that muſt needs be a miſerable Country which cannot furniſh Food for its own Inhabitants. But, what he chiefly wondered at, was how ſuch vaſt Tracts of Ground, as I deſcribed, ſhould be wholly without *Freſh-water*, and the People put to the Neceſſity of ſending over the Sea for Drink. I replied, that *England* (the dear Place of my Nativity) was computed to produce three Times the Quantity of Food, more than its Inhabitants are able to conſume, as well as Liquors extracted from Grain, or preſſed out of the Fruit of certain Trees, which made excellent Drink; and the

the ſame Proportion in every other Convenience of Life. But, in order to feed the Luxury and Intemperance of the Males, and the Vanity of the Females, we ſent away the greateſt Part of our neceſſary Things to other Countries, from whence in Return we brought the Materials of Diſeaſes, Folly, and Vice, to ſpend among our ſelves. Hence it follows of Neceſſity, that vaſt Numbers of our People are compelled to ſeek their Livelihood by Begging, Robbing, Stealing, Cheating, Pimping, Forſwearing, Flattering, Suborning, Forging, Gaming, Lying, Fawning, Hectoring, Voting, Scribling, Stargazing, Poyſoning, Whoring, Canting, Libelling, Free-thinking, and the like Occupations: Every one of which Terms, I was at much Pains to make him underſtand.

THAT, *Wine* was not imported among us from foreign Countries, to ſupply the Want of Water or other Drinks, but becauſe it was a Sort of Liquid which made us merry, by putting us out of our Senſes; diverted all melancholy Thoughts, begat wild extravagant Imaginations in the Brain, raiſed our Hopes, and baniſhed our Fears; ſuſpended every Office of Reaſon for a Time, and deprived us of the Uſe of our Limbs, until we fell into a profound Sleep; although it muſt be confeſſed, that we always awaked ſick and diſpirited; and that the Uſe of this Liquor filled us with Diſeaſes, which made our Lives uncomfortable and ſhort.

BUT, beſide all this, the Bulk of our People ſupported themſelves by furniſhing the Neceſſities or Conveniencies of Life to the Rich, and to each other. For Inſtance, when I am at home and dreſſed as I ought to be, I carry on my Body the Workmanſhip of an hundred Tradeſmen; the Building and Furniture of my Houſe employ as many

Digitized by Google

many more; and five Times the Number to adorn my Wife.

I WAS going on to tell him of another Sort of People, who get their Livelihood by attending the Sick; having upon ſome Occaſions informed his Honour that many of my Crew had died of Diſeaſes: But here it was with the utmoſt Difficulty that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could eaſily conceive, that a *Houyhnhnm* grew weak and heavy a few Days before his Death; or by ſome Accident might hurt a Limb. But, that Nature, who worketh all Things to Perfection, ſhould ſuffer any Pains to breed in our Bodies, he thought impoſſible; and deſired to know the Reaſon of ſo unaccountable an Evil. I told him, we fed on a thouſand Things which operated contrary to each other: That, we eat when we were not hungry, and drank without the Provocation of Thirſt: That, we ſat whole Nights drinking ſtrong Liquors without eating a Bit; which diſpoſed us to Sloth, enflamed our Bodies, and precipitated or prevented Digeſtion. That, proſtitute Female *Yahoos* acquired a certain Malady, which bred Rottenneſs in the Bones of thoſe, who fell into their Embraces: That, this and many other Diſeaſes, were propagated from Father to Son; ſo that great Numbers come into the World with complicated Maladies upon them: That, it would be endleſs to give him a Catalogue of all Diſeaſes incident to human Bodies; for they could not be fewer than five or ſix hundred, ſpread over every Limb, and Joint: In ſhort, every Part, external and inteſtine, having Diſeaſes appropriated to each. To remedy which, there was a Sort of People bred up among us, in the Profeſſion or Pretence of curing the Sick. And, becauſe I had ſome Skill in the Faculty, I would, in

in Gratitude to his Honour, let him know the whole Myſtery and Method by which they proceed.

THEIR Fundamental is, that all Diſeaſes ariſe from *Repletion*; from whence they conclude, that a great *Evacuation* of the Body is neceſſary, either through the natural Paſſage, or upwards at the Mouth. Their next Buſineſs is, from Herbs, Minerals, Gums, Oyls, Shells, Salts, Juices, Sea-weed, Excrements, Barks of Trees, Serpents, Toads, Frogs, Spiders, dead Mens Fleſh and Bones, Beaſts and Fiſhes, to form a Compoſition for Smell and Taſte the moſt abominable, nauſeous and deteſtable, that they can poſſibly contrive, which the Stomach immediately rejects with Loathing: And, this they call a *Vomit*. Or elſe from the ſame Store-houſe, with ſome other poyſonous Additions, they command us to take in at the Orifice *above* or *below* (juſt as the Phyſician then happens to be diſpoſed) a Medicine equally annoying and diſguſtful to the Bowels; which relaxing the Belly, drives down all before it: And this they call a *Purge*, or a *Clyſter*. For Nature (as the Phyſicians alledge) having intended the ſuperior anterior Orifice only for the *Intromiſſion* of Solids and Liquids, and the inferior Poſterior for Ejection; theſe Artiſts ingeniouſly conſidering, that in all Diſeaſes Nature is forced out of her Seat; therefore, to replace her in it, the Body muſt be treated in a Manner directly contrary, by interchanging the Uſe of each Orifice; forcing Solids and Liquids in at the *Anus*, and making Evacuations at the Mouth.

BUT, beſides real Diſeaſes, we are ſubject to many that are only imaginary, for which the Phyſicians have invented imaginary Cures; theſe have their ſeveral Names, and ſo have the Drugs that are proper for them; and with theſe our Female *Yahoos* are always infeſted.

ONE

ONE great Excellency in this Tribe is their Skill at *Prognoſticks*, wherein they ſeldom fail; their Predictions in real Diſeaſes, when they riſe to any Degree of Malignity, generally portending *Death*, which is always in their Power, when Recovery is not: And therefore, upon any unexpected Signs of Amendment, after they have pronounced their Sentence, rather than be accuſed as falſe Prophets, they know how to approve their Sagacity to the World by a ſeaſonable Doſe.

THEY are likewiſe of ſpecial Uſe to Huſbands and Wives, who are grown weary of their Mates; to eldeſt Sons, to great Miniſters of State, and often to Princes.

I HAD formerly upon Occaſion diſcourſed with my Maſter upon the Nature of *Government* in general, and particularly of our own *excellent Conſtitution*, deſervedly the Wonder and Envy of the whole World. But having here accidentally mentioned a *Miniſter of State*; he commanded me ſome Time after to inform him, what Species of *Yahoo* I particularly meant by that Appellation.

I TOLD him, that a *Firſt* or *Chief Miniſter of State*, whom I intended to deſcribe, was a Creature wholly exempt from Joy and Grief, Love and Hatred, Pity and Anger; at leaſt makes Uſe of no other Paſſions but a violent Deſire of Wealth, Power, and Titles: That, he applies his Words to all Uſes, except to the Indication of his Mind: That, he never tells a *Truth*, but with an Intent that you ſhould take it for a *Lye*; nor a *Lye*, but with a Deſign that you ſhould take it for a *Truth*; that thoſe he ſpeaks worſt of behind their Backs, are in the ſureſt Way to Preferment; and whenever he begins to praiſe you to others or to your ſelf, you are from that

that Day forlorn. The worſt Mark you can receive is a *Promiſe*, eſpecially when it is confirmed with an Oath; after which every wiſe Man retires, and gives over all Hopes.

THERE are three Methods by which a Man may riſe to be a Chief Miniſter: The firſt is, by knowing how with Prudence to diſpoſe of a Wife, a Daughter, or a Siſter: The ſecond, by betraying or undermining his Predeceſſor: And the third is, by a *furious Zeal* in publick Aſſemblies againſt the Corruptions of the Court. But a wiſe Prince would rather chuſe to employ thoſe who practiſe the laſt of theſe Methods; becauſe ſuch Zealots prove always the moſt obſequious and ſubſervient to the Will and Paſſions of their Maſter. That, theſe *Miniſters* having all Employments at their Diſpoſal, preſerve themſelves in Power by bribing the Majority of a Senate, or great Council; and at laſt by an Expedient called an *Act of Indemnity* (whereof I deſcribed the Nature to him) they ſecure themſelves from After-Reckonings, and retire from the Publick, laden with the Spoils of the Nation.

THE Palace of a *Chief Miniſter*, is a Seminary to breed up others in his own Trade: The Pages, Lacquies, and Porter, by imitating their Maſter, become *Miniſters of State* in their ſeveral Diſtricts, and learn to excel in the three principal *Ingredients*, of *Inſolence*, *Lying*, and *Bribery*. Accordingly, they have a *Subaltern* Court paid to them by Perſons of the beſt Rank; and ſometimes by the Force of Dexterity and Impudence, arrive through ſeveral Gradations to be Succeſſors to their Lord.

HE is uſually governed by a decayed Wench, or favourite Footman, who are the Tunnels through which all Graces are conveyed, and may properly be

Digitized by Google

be called, *in the laſt Reſort*, the Governors of the Kingdom.

ONE Day, my Maſter, having heard me mention the *Nobility* of my Country, was pleaſed to make me a Compliment which I could not pretend to deſerve: That, he was ſure, I muſt have been born of ſome noble Family, becauſe I far exceeded in Shape, Colour, and Cleanlineſs, all the *Yahoos* of his Nation, although I ſeemed to fail in Strength, and Agility, which muſt be imputed to my different Way of Living from thoſe other Brutes; and beſides, I was not only endowed with the Faculty of Speech, but likewiſe with ſome Rudiments of Reaſon, to a Degree, that with all his Acquaintance I paſſed for a Prodigy.

HE made me obſerve, that among the *Houyhnhnms*, the *White*, the *Sorrel*, and the *Iron-Grey*, were not ſo exactly ſhaped as the *Bay*, the *Dapple-Grey*, and the *Black*; nor born with equal Talents of Mind, or a Capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the Condition of Servants, without ever aſpiring to match out of their own Race, which in that Country would be reckoned monſtrous and unnatural.

I MADE his Honour my moſt humble Acknowledgments for the good Opinion he was pleaſed to conceive of me; but aſſured him at the ſame Time, that my Birth was of the lower Sort, having been born of plain, honeſt Parents, who were juſt able to give me a tolerable Education: That, *Nobility* among us was altogether a different Thing from the Idea he had of it: That, our young *Noblemen* are bred from their Childhood in Idleneſs and Luxury: That, as ſoon as Years will permit, they conſume their Vigour, and contract odious Diſeaſes among lewd Females; and when their Fortunes are almoſt ruined,

Digitized by Google

ruined, they marry ſome Woman of mean Birth, diſagreeable Perſon, and unſound Conſtitution, merely for the Sake of Money, whom they hate and deſpiſe: That, the Production of ſuch Marriages are generally ſcrophulous, rickety, or deformed Children; by which Means the Family ſeldom continues above three Generations, unleſs the Wife take Care to provide a healthy Father among her Neighbours, or Domeſticks, in order to improve and continue the Breed: That, a weak diſeaſed Body, a meager Countenance, and ſallow Complexion, are the true Marks of *noble Blood*; and a healthy robuſt Appearance is ſo diſgraceful in a Man of Quality, that the World concludes his real Father to have been a Groom or a Coachman. The Imperfections of his Mind run parallel with thoſe of his Body; being a Compoſition of Spleen, Dulneſs, Ignorance, Caprice, Senſuality, and Pride.

WITHOUT the Conſent of this illuſtrious Body, no Law can be enacted, repealed, or altered: And theſe Nobles have likewiſe the Deciſion of all our Poſſeſſions without Appeal.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

The Author's great Love of his Native Country. His Maſter's Obſervations upon the Conſtitution and Adminiſtration of ENGLAND, *as deſcribed by the Author, with parallel Caſes and Compariſons. His Maſter's Obſervations upon human Nature.*

THE Reader may be diſpoſed to wonder how I could prevail on my ſelf to give ſo free a Repreſentation of my own Species, among a Race of Mortals who were already too apt to conceive the vileſt Opinion of human Kind, from that entire Congruity betwixt me and their *Yahoos*. But, I muſt freely confeſs, that the many Virtues of thoſe excellent *Quadrupeds* placed in oppoſite View to human Corruptions, had ſo far opened mine Eyes, and enlarged my Underſtanding, that I began to view the Actions and Paſſions of Man in a very different Light; and to think the Honour of my own Kind not worth managing; which, beſides, it was impoſſible for me to do before a Perſon of ſo acute a Judgment as my Maſter, who daily convinced me of a thouſand Faults in my ſelf, whereof I had not the leaſt Perception before, and which with us would never be numbered, even among

among human Infirmities. I had likewiſe learned from his Example an utter Deteſtation of all Falſehood or Diſguiſe; and *Truth* appeared ſo amiable to me, that I determined upon ſacrificing every Thing to it.

LET me deal ſo candidly with the Reader, as to confeſs, that there was yet a much ſtronger Motive for the Freedom I took in my Repreſentation of Things. I had not been a Year in this Country, before I contracted ſuch a Love and Veneration for the Inhabitants, that I entered on a firm Reſolution never to return to human Kind, but to paſs the reſt of my Life among theſe admirable *Houyhnhnms*, in the Contemplation and Practice of every Virtue; where I could have no Example or Incitement to Vice. But it was decreed by Fortune, my perpetual Enemy, that ſo great Felicity ſhould not fall to my Share. However, it is now ſome Comfort to reflect, that in what I ſaid of my Countrymen, I *extenuated* their Faults as much as I durſt before ſo ſtrict an Examiner; and upon every Article, gave as *favourable* a Turn, as the Matter would bear. For, indeed, who is there alive that will not be ſwayed by his Byaſs and Partiality to the Place of his Birth?

I HAVE related the Subſtance of ſeveral Converſations I had with my Maſter, during the greateſt Part of the Time I had the Honour to be in his Service; but have indeed for Brevity Sake omitted much more than is here ſet down.

WHEN I had anſwered all his Queſtions, and his Curioſity ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied; he ſent for me one Morning early, and commanding me to ſit down at ſome Diſtance, (an Honour which he had never before conferred upon me) he ſaid, he had been very ſeriouſly conſidering my whole Story,

as

Digitized by Google

as far as it related both to my ſelf and my Country: That, he looked upon us as a Sort of Animals to whoſe Share, by what Accident he could not conjecture, ſome ſmall Pittance of *Reaſon* had fallen, whereof we made no other Uſe than by its Aſſiſtance to aggravate our *natural* Corruptions, and to acquire new ones which Nature had not given us: That, we diſarmed our ſelves of the few Abilities ſhe had beſtowed; had been very ſucceſsful in multiplying our original Wants, and ſeemed to ſpend our whole Lives in vain Endeavours to ſupply them by our own Inventions: That, as to my ſelf, it was manifeſt I had neither the Strength or Agility of a common *Yahoo:* That, I walked infirmly on my hinder Feet; had found out a Contrivance to make my Claws of no Uſe or Defence, and to remove the Hair from my Chin, which was intended as a Shelter from the Sun and the Weather. Laſtly, That I could neither run with Speed, nor climb Trees like my *Brethren* (as he called them) the *Yahoos* in this Country.

THAT, our Inſtitutions of *Government* and *Law* were plainly owing to our groſs Defects in *Reaſon*, and by Conſequence, in *Virtue*; becauſe *Reaſon* alone is ſufficient to govern a *rational* Creature; which was therefore a Character we had no Pretence to challenge, even from the Account I had given of my own People; although he manifeſtly perceived, that in order to favour them, I had concealed many Particulars, and often *ſaid the Thing which was not.*

HE was the more confirmed in this Opinion, becauſe he obſerved, that as I agreed in every Feature of my Body with other *Yahoos*, except where it was to my real Diſadvantage in point of Strength, Speed and Activity, the Shortneſs of my Claws, and

Digitized by Google

and ſome other Particulars where Nature had no Part; ſo, from the Repreſentation I had given him of our Lives, our Manners, and our Actions, he found as near a Reſemblance in the Diſpoſition of our Minds. He ſaid, the *Yahoos* were known to hate one another more than they did any different Species of Animals; and the Reaſon uſually aſſigned, was, the Odiouſneſs of their own Shapes, which all could ſee in the reſt, but not in themſelves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwiſe in us to *cover* our Bodies, and by that Invention, conceal many of our Deformities from each other, which would elſe be hardly ſupportable. But, he now found he had been miſtaken; and that the Diſſentions of thoſe Brutes in his Country were owing to the ſame Cauſe with ours, as I had deſcribed them. For, if (ſaid he) you throw among five *Yahoos* as much Food as would be ſufficient for fifty, they will, inſtead of eating peaceably, fall together by the Ears, each ſingle one impatient to *have all to itſelf*; and therefore a Servant was uſually employed to ſtand by while they were feeding abroad, and thoſe kept at home were tied at a Diſtance from each other: That, if a Cow died of Age or Accident, before a *Houyhnhnm* could ſecure it for his own *Yahoos*, thoſe in the Neighbourhood would come in Herds to ſeize it, and then would enſue ſuch a Battle as I had deſcribed, with terrible Wounds made by their Claws on both Sides, although they ſeldom were able to kill one another, for Want of ſuch convenient Inſtruments of Death as we had invented. At other Times the like Battles have been fought between the *Yahoos* of ſeveral Neighbourhoods without any viſible Cauſe: Thoſe of one Diſtrict watching all Opportunities to ſurprize the next before they are prepared.

Digitized by Google

prepared. But, if they find their Project hath miſcarried, they return home, and for Want of Enemies, engage in what I call a *Civil War* among themſelves.

THAT, in ſome Fields of his Country, there are certain *ſhining Stones* of ſeveral Colours, whereof the *Yahoos* are violently fond; and when Part of theſe *Stones* are fixed in the Earth, as it ſometimes happeneth, they will dig with their Claws for whole Days to get them out, and carry them away, and hide them by Heaps in their Kennels; but ſtill looking round with great Caution, for Fear their Comrades ſhould find out their Treaſure. My Maſter ſaid, he could never diſcover the Reaſon of this unnatural Appetite, or how theſe *Stones* could be of any Uſe to a *Yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the ſame Principle of *Avarice*, which I had aſcribed to Mankind: That, he had once, by Way of Experiment, privately removed a Heap of theſe *Stones* from the Place where one of his *Yahoos* had buried it: Whereupon, the ſordid Animal miſſing his Treaſure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole Herd to the Place, there miſerably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the reſt; began to pine away, would neither eat nor ſleep, nor work, until he ordered a Servant privately to convey the *Stones* into the ſame Hole, and hide them as before; which when his *Yahoo* had found, he preſently recovered his Spirits and good Humour; but took Care to remove them to a better hiding Place; and hath ever ſince been a very ſerviceable Brute.

MY Maſter farther aſſured me, which I alſo obſerved my ſelf; that in the Fields where theſe *ſhining Stones* abound, the fierceſt and moſt frequent Battles

Battles are fought, occaſioned by perpetual Inroads of the neighbouring *Yahoos*.

HE ſaid, it was common when two *Yahoos* diſcovered ſuch a *Stone* in a Field, and were contending which of them ſhould be the Proprietor, a third would take the Advantage, and carry it away from them both; which my Maſter would needs contend to have ſome Reſemblance with our *Suits at Law*; wherein I thought it for our Credit not to undeceive him; ſince the Deciſion he mentioned was much more equitable than many Decrees among us: Becauſe, the Plaintiff and Defendant there loſt nothing beſide the *Stone* they contended for; whereas our *Courts of Equity*, would never have diſmiſſed the Cauſe while either of them had any Thing left.

MY Maſter continuing his Diſcourſe, ſaid, there was nothing that rendered the *Yahoos* more odious, than their undiſtinguiſhed Appetite to devour every Thing that came in their Way, whether Herbs, Roots, Berries, corrupted Fleſh of Animals, or all mingled together: And, it was peculiar in their Temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by Rapine or Stealth at a greater Diſtance, than much better Food provided for them at home. If their Prey held out, they would eat until they were ready to burſt, after which Nature had pointed out to them a certain *Root* that gave them a general Evacuation.

THERE was alſo another Kind of *Root* very *juicy*, but ſomething rare and difficult to be found, which the *Yahoos* fought for with much Eagerneſs, and would ſuck it with great Delight: It produced the ſame Effects that Wine hath upon us. It would make them ſometimes hug, and ſometimes tear one another; they would howl and grin, and

Digitized by Google

chatter, and roul, and tumble, and then fall asleep in the Mud.

I DID indeed observe, that the *Yahoos* were the only Animals in this Country subject to any Diseases; which, however, were much fewer than Horses have among us, and contracted not by any ill Treatment they meet with, but by the Nastiness and Greediness of that sordid Brute. Neither has their Language any more than a general Appellation for those Maladies; which is borrowed from the Name of the Beast, and called *Hnea Yahoo*, or the *Yahoo's-Evil*; and the Cure prescribed is a Mixture of *their own Dung* and *Urine*, forcibly put down the *Yahoo's* Throat. This I have since often known to have been taken with Success: And do here freely recommend it to my Countrymen, for the publick Good, as an admirable Specifick against all Diseases produced by Repletion.

As to Learning, Government, Arts, Manufactures, and the like; my Master confessed he could find little or no Resemblance between the *Yahoos* of that Country, and those in ours. For, he only meant to observe what Parity there was in our Natures. He had heard indeed some curious *Houyhnhnms* observe, that in most Herds there was a Sort of ruling *Yahoo*, (as among us there is generally some leading or principal Stag in a Park) who was always more *deformed* in Body, and *mischievous in Disposition*, than any of the rest. That, this *Leader* had usually a Favourite as *like himself* as he could get, whose Employment was to *lick his Master's Feet and Posteriors, and drive the Female* Yahoos *to his Kennel*; for which he was now and then rewarded with a Piece of Ass's Flesh. This *Favourite* is hated by the whole Herd; and therefore to protect himself, keeps always *near the Person of his*

Digitized by Google

his Leader. He uſually continues in Office until a worſe can be found; but the very Moment he is diſcarded, his Succeſſor, at the Head of all the *Yahoos*, in that Diſtrict, young and old, Male and Female, come in a Body, and diſcharge their Excrements upon him from Head to Foot. But, how far this might be applicable to our *Courts* and *Favourites*, and *Miniſters of State*, my Maſter ſaid I could beſt determine.

I DURST make no Return to this malicious Inſinuation, which debaſed human Underſtanding below the Sagacity of a common *Hound*, who hath Judgment enough to diſtinguiſh and follow the Cry of the *ableſt Dog in the Pack*, without being ever miſtaken.

MY Maſter told me, there were ſome Qualities remarkable in the *Yahoos*, which he had not obſerved me to mention, or at leaſt very ſlightly, in the Accounts I had given him of human Kind. He ſaid, thoſe Animals, like other Brutes, had their Females in common; but in this they differed, that the She-*Yahoo* would admit the Male, while ſhe was pregnant; and that the Hees would quarrel and fight with the Females as fiercely as with each other. Both which Practices were ſuch Degrees of infamous Brutality, that no other ſenſitive Creature ever arrived at.

ANOTHER Thing he wondered at in the *Yahoos*, was their ſtrange Diſpoſition to Naſtineſs and Dirt; whereas there appears to be a natural Love of Cleanlineſs in all other Animals. As to the two former Accuſations, I was glad to let them paſs without any Reply, becauſe I had not a Word to offer upon them in Defence of my Species, which otherwiſe I certainly had done from my own Inclinations. But, I could have eaſily vindicated human Kind from

Digitized by Google

the Imputation of Singularity upon the laſt Article, if there had been any *Swine* in that Country, (as unluckily for me there were not) which although it may be a *ſweeter Quadruped* than a *Yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in Juſtice pretend to more Cleanlineſs; and ſo his Honour himſelf muſt have owned, if he had ſeen their filthy Way of feeding, and their Cuſtom of wallowing and ſleeping in the Mud.

MY Maſter likewiſe mentioned another Quality, which his Servants had diſcovered in ſeveral *Yahoos*, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He ſaid, a Fancy would ſometimes take a *Yahoo*, to retire into a Corner, to lie down and howl, and groan, and ſpurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, and wanted neither Food nor Water; nor did the Servants imagine what could poſſibly ail him. And the only Remedy they found, was to ſet him to hard Work, after which he would infallibly come to himſelf. To this I was ſilent out of Partiality to my own Kind; yet here I could plainly diſcover the true Seeds of *Spleen*, which only ſeizeth on the *Lazy*, the *Luxurious*, and the *Rich*; who, if they were forced to undergo the *ſame Regimen*, I would undertake for the Cure.

HIS Honour had farther obſerved, that a Female-*Yahoo* would often ſtand behind a Bank or a Buſh, to gaze on the young Males paſſing by, and then appear, and hide, uſing many antick Geſtures and Grimaces; at which Time it was obſerved, that ſhe had a moſt *offenſive Smell*; and when any of the Males advanced, would ſlowly retire, looking often back, and with a counterfeit Shew of Fear, run off into ſome convenient Place where ſhe knew the Male would follow her.

AT other Times, if a Female Stranger came among

Digitized by Google

among them, three or four of her own Sex would get about her, and ſtare and chatter, and grin, and ſmell her all over; and then turn off with Geſtures that ſeemed to expreſs Contempt and Diſdain.

PERHAPS my Maſter might refine a little in theſe Speculations, which he had drawn from what he obſerved himſelf, or had been told him by others: However, I could not reflect without ſome Amazement, and much Sorrow, that the Rudiments of *Lewdneſs*, *Coquetry*, *Cenſure*, and *Scandal*, ſhould have Place by Inſtinct in Womankind.

I EXPECTED every Moment, that my Maſter would accuſe the *Yahoos* of thoſe unnatural Appetites in both Sexes, ſo common among us. But Nature it ſeems hath not been ſo expert a School-Miſtreſs; and theſe politer Pleaſures are entirely the Productions of Art and Reaſon, on our Side of the Globe.

CHAP

CHAP. VIII.

The Author relateth ſeveral Particulars of the Yahoos. *The great Virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The Education and Exerciſe of their Youth. Their general Aſſembly.*

AS I ought to have underſtood human Nature much better than I ſuppoſed it poſſible for my Maſter to do, ſo it was eaſy to apply the Character he gave of the *Yahoos* to my ſelf and my Countrymen; and I believed I could yet make farther Diſcoveries from my own Obſervation. I therefore often begged his Honour to let me go among the Herds of *Yahoos* in the Neighbourhood; to which he always very graciouſly conſented, being perfectly convinced that the Hatred I bore thoſe Brutes would never ſuffer me to be corrupted by them; and his Honour ordered one of his Servants, a ſtrong ſorrel Nag, very honeſt and good-natured, to be my Guard; without whoſe Protection I durſt not undertake ſuch Adventures. For I have already told the Reader how much I was peſtered by thoſe odious

odious Animals upon my firſt Arrival. I afterwards failed very narrowly three or four Times of falling into their Clutches, when I happened to ſtray at any Diſtance without my Hanger. And I have Reaſon to believe, they had ſome Imagination that I was of their own Species, which I often aſſiſted myſelf, by ſtripping up my Sleeves, and ſhewing my naked Arms and Breaſt in their Sight, when my Protector was with me: At which Times they would approach as near as they durſt, and imitate my Actions after the Manner of Monkeys, but ever with great Signs of Hatred; as a tame *Jack Daw* with Cap and Stockings, is always perſecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

THEY are prodigiouſly nimble from their Infancy; however, I once caught a young Male of three Years old, and endeavoured by all Marks of Tenderneſs to make it quiet; but the little Imp fell a ſqualling, and ſcratching, and biting with ſuch Violence, that I was forced to let it go; and it was high Time, for a whole Troop of old ones came about us at the Noiſe; but finding the Cub was ſafe, (for away it ran) and my Sorrel Nag being by, they durſt not venture near us. I obſerved the young Animal's Fleſh to ſmell very rank, and the Stink was ſomewhat between a *Weaſel* and a *Fox*, but much more diſagreeable. I forgot another Circumſtance, (and perhaps I might have the Readers Pardon, if it were wholly omitted) that while I held the odious Vermin in my Hands, it voided its filthy Excrements of a yellow liquid Subſtance, all over my Cloaths; but by good Fortune there was a ſmall Brook hard by, where I waſhed myſelf as clean as I could; although I durſt not come

Digitized by Google

come into my Maſter's Preſence, until I were ſufficiently aired.

BY what I could diſcover, the *Yahoos* appear to be the moſt unteachable of all Animals, their Capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry Burthens. Yet I am of Opinion, this Defect ariſeth chiefly from a perverſe, reſtive Diſpoſition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous and revengeful. They are ſtrong and hardy, but of a cowardly Spirit, and by Conſequence inſolent, abject, and cruel. It is obſerved, that the *Red-haired* of both Sexes are more libidinous and miſchievous than the reſt, whom yet they much exceed in Strength and Activity.

THE *Houyhnhnms* keep the *Yahoos* for preſent Uſe in Huts not far from the Houſe; but the reſt are ſent abroad to certain Fields, where they dig up Roots, eat ſeveral Kinds of Herbs, and ſearch about for Carrion, or ſometimes catch *Weaſels* and *Lubimuhs* (a Sort of *wild Rat*) which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep Holes with their Nails on the Side of a riſing Ground, wherein they lie by themſelves; only the Kennels of the Females are larger, ſufficient to hold two or three Cubs.

THEY ſwim from their Infancy like Frogs, and are able to continue long under Water, where they often take Fiſh, which the Females carry home to their Young. And upon this Occaſion, I hope the Reader will pardon my relating an odd Adventure.

BEING one Day abroad with my Protector the Sorrel Nag, and the Weather exceeding hot, I entreated him to let me bathe in a River that was near. He conſented, and I immediately ſtripped myſelf ſtark naked, and went down ſoftly into the Stream.

Digitized by Google

Stream. It happened that a young Female *Yahoo* ſtanding behind a Bank, ſaw the whole Proceeding; and inflamed by Deſire, as the Nag and I conjectured, came running with all Speed, and leaped into the Water within five Yards of the Place where I bathed. I was never in my Life ſo terribly frighted; the Nag was grazing at ſome Diſtance, not ſuſpecting any Harm: She embraced me after a moſt fulſome Manner; I roared as loud as I could, and the Nag came galloping towards me, whereupon ſhe quitted her Graſp, with the utmoſt Reluctancy, and leaped upon the oppoſite Bank, where ſhe ſtood gazing and howling all the Time I was putting on my Cloaths.

THIS was Matter of Diverſion to my Maſter and his Family, as well as of Mortification to my ſelf. For now I could no longer deny, that I was a real *Yahoo*, in every Limb and Feature, ſince the Females had a natural Propenſity to me as one of their own Species: Neither was the Hair of this Brute of a red Colour (which might have been ſome Excuſe for an Appetite a little irregular) but black as Sloe, and her Countenance did not make an Appearance altogether ſo hideous as the reſt of the Kind; for, I think, ſhe could not be above eleven Years old.

HAVING already lived three Years in this Country, the Reader I ſuppoſe will expect, that I ſhould, like other Travellers, give him ſome Account of the Manners and Cuſtoms of its Inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal Study to learn.

As theſe noble *Houyhnhnms* are endowed by Nature with a general Diſpoſition to all Virtues, and have no Conceptions or Ideas of what is evil in a rational Creature; ſo their grand Maxim is, to cultivate *Reaſon*, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither

Digitized by Google

Neither is *Reaſon* among them a Point problematical as with us, where Men can argue with Plauſibility on both Sides of the Queſtion; but ſtrikes you with immediate Conviction; as it muſt needs do where it is not mingled, obſcured, or diſcoloured by Paſſion and Intereſt. I remember it was with extreme Difficulty that I could bring my Maſter to underſtand the Meaning of the Word *Opinion*, or how a Point could be diſputable; becauſe *Reaſon* taught us to affirm or deny, only where we are certain; and beyond our Knowledge, we cannot do either. So that Controverſies, Wranglings, Diſputes, and Poſitiveneſs in falſe or dubious Propoſitions, are Evils unknown among the *Houyhnhnms*. In the like Manner, when I uſed to explain to him our ſeveral Syſtems of *Natural Philoſophy*, he would laugh that a Creature pretending to *Reaſon*, ſhould value it ſelf upon the Knowledge of other Peoples Conjectures, and in Things, where that Knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no Uſe. Wherein he agreed entirely with the Sentiments of *Socrates*, as *Plato* delivers them; which I mention as the higheſt Honour I can do that Prince of Philoſophers. I have often ſince reflected what Deſtruction ſuch a Doctrine would make in the Libraries of *Europe*; and how many Paths to Fame would be then ſhut up in the learned World.

FRIENDSHIP and *Benevolence* are the two principal Virtues among the *Houyhnhnms*; and theſe not confined to particular Objects, but univerſal to the whole Race: For, a Stranger from the remoteſt Part, is equally treated with the neareſt Neighbour, and wherever he goes, looks upon himſelf as at home. They preſerve *Decency* and *Civility* in the higheſt Degrees, but are altogether ignorant of *Ceremony*. They have no Fondneſs for their Colts or Foles;

Digitized by Google

Foles; but the Care they take in educating them proceedeth entirely from the Dictates of *Reaſon*. And, I obſerved my Maſter to ſhew the ſame Affection to his Neighbour's Iſſue, that he had for his own. They will have it that *Nature* teaches them to love the whole Species, and it is *Reaſon* only that maketh a Diſtinction of Perſons, where there is a ſuperior Degree of Virtue.

WHEN the Matron *Houyhnhnms* have produced one of each Sex, they no longer accompany with their Conſorts, except they loſe one of their Iſſue by ſome Caſualty, which very ſeldom happens: But in ſuch a Caſe they meet again; or when the like Accident befals a Perſon, whoſe Wife is paſt bearing, ſome other Couple beſtows on him one of their own Colts, and then go together a ſecond Time, until the Mother be pregnant. This Caution is neceſſary to prevent the Country from being overburthened with Numbers. But the Race of inferior *Houyhnhnms* bred up to be Servants, is not ſo ſtrictly limited upon this Article; theſe are allowed to produce three of each Sex, to be Domeſticks in the noble Families.

IN their Marriages, they are exactly careful to chuſe ſuch Colours as will not make any diſagreeable Mixture in the Breed. *Strength* is chiefly valued in the Male, and *Comelineſs* in the Female; not upon the Account of *Love*, but to preſerve the Race from degenerating: For, where a Female happens to excel in *Strength*, a Conſort is choſen with regard to *Comelineſs*. Courtſhip, Love, Preſents, Joyntures, Settlements, have no Place in their Thoughts; or Terms whereby to expreſs them in their Language. The young Couple meet and are joined, merely becauſe it is the Determination of their Parents and Friends: It is what they ſee done

Digitized by Google

done every Day; and they look upon it as one of the neceſſary Actions in a reaſonable Being. But, the Violation of Marriage, or any other Unchaſtity, was never heard of: And the married Pair paſs their Lives with the ſame Friendſhip, and mutual Benevolence that they bear to all others of the ſame Species, who come in their Way; without Jealouſy, Fondneſs, Quarelling, or Diſcontent.

IN educating the Youth of both Sexes, their Method is admirable, and highly deſerveth our Imitation. Theſe are not ſuffered to taſte a Grain of *Oats*, except upon certain Days, until eighteen Years old; nor *Milk*, but very rarely; and in Summer, they graze two Hours in the Morning, and as many in the Evening, which their Parents likewiſe obſerve; but the Servants are not allowed above half that Time; and a great Part of the Graſs is brought home, which they eat at the moſt convenient Hours, when they can be beſt ſpared from Work.

TEMPERANCE, *Induſtry*, *Exerciſe*, and *Cleanlineſs*, are the Leſſons equally enjoyned to the young ones of both Sexes: And my Maſter thought it monſtrous in us to give the Females a different Kind of Education from the Males, except in ſome Articles of Domeſtick Management; whereby, as he truly obſerved, one half of our Natives were good for nothing but bringing Children into the World: And to truſt the Care of their Children to ſuch uſeleſs Animals, he ſaid was yet a greater Inſtance of Brutality.

BUT, the *Houyhnhnms* train up their Youth to Strength, Speed, and Hardineſs, by exerciſing them in running Races up and down ſteep Hills, or over hard ſtony Grounds; and when they are all in a Sweat, they are ordered to leap over Head and Ears

Digitized by Google

Ears into a Pond or River. Four Times a Year the Youth of certain Diſtricts meet to ſhew their Proficiency in Running, and Leaping, and other Feats of Strength and Agility; where the Victor is rewarded with a Song, made in his or her Praiſe. On this Feſtival, the Servants drive a Herd of *Yahoos* into the Field, laden with Hay, and Oats, and Milk for a Repaſt to the *Houyhnhnms*; after which, theſe Brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noiſome to the Aſſembly.

EVERY fourth Year, at the *Vernal Equinox*, there is a Repreſentative Council of the whole Nation, which meets in a Plain about twenty Miles from our Houſe, and continueth about five or ſix Days. Here they inquire into the State and Condition of the ſeveral Diſtricts; whether they abound, or be deficient in Hay, or Oats, or Cows, or *Yahoos?* And wherever there is any Want (which is but ſeldom) it is immediately ſupplied by unanimous Conſent and Contribution. Here likewiſe the Regulation of Children is ſettled: As for Inſtance, if a *Houyhnhnm* hath two Males, he changeth one of them with another who hath two Females: And when a Child hath been loſt by any Caſualty, where the Mother is paſt Breeding, it is determined what Family ſhall breed another to ſupply the Loſs.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

A grand Debate at the general Aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms; *and how it was determined. The Learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their Buildings. Their Manner of Burials. The Defectiveneſs of their Language.*

ONE of theſe Grand Aſſemblies was held in my Time, about three Months before my Departure, whither my Maſter went as the Repreſentative of our Diſtrict. In this Council was reſumed their old Debate, and indeed, the only Debate that ever happened in their Country; whereof my Maſter, after his Return, gave me a very particular Account.

THE Queſtion to be debated was, Whether the *Yahoos* ſhould be exterminated from the Face of the Earth. One of the *Members* for the Affirmative offered ſeveral Arguments of great Strength and Weight; alledging, That, as the *Yahoos* were the moſt filthy, noiſome, and deformed Animals which Nature ever produced, ſo they were the moſt reſtive and indocible, miſchievous and malicious: They would privately ſuck the Teats of the *Houyhnhnms* Cows; kill and devour their Cats, trample

Digitized by Google

trample down their Oats and Graſs, if they were not continually watched; and commit a thouſand other Extravagancies. He took Notice of a general Tradition, that *Yahoos* had not been always in their Country: But, that many Ages ago, two of theſe Brutes appeared together upon a Mountain; whether produced by the Heat of the Sun upon corrupted Mud and Slime, or from the Ooze and Froth of the Sea, was never known. That, theſe *Yahoos* engendered, and their Brood in a ſhort Time grew ſo numerous, as to over-run and infeſt the whole Nation. That, the *Houyhnhnms*, to get rid of this Evil, made a general Hunting, and at laſt incloſed the whole Herd; and deſtroying the Older, every *Houyhnhnm* kept two young Ones in a Kennel, and brought them to ſuch a Degree of Tameneſs, as an Animal ſo ſavage by Nature, can be capable of acquiring; uſing them for Draught and Carriage. That, there ſeemed to be much Truth in this Tradition, and that thoſe Creatures could not be *Ylnhniamſhy* (or *Aborigines* of the Land), becauſe of the violent Hatred the *Houyhnhnms*, as well as all other Animals bore them; which although their evil Diſpoſition ſufficiently deſerved, could never have arrived at ſo high a Degree, if they had been *Aborigines*, or elſe they would have long ſince been rooted out. That, the Inhabitants taking a Fancy to uſe the Service of the *Yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the Breed of *Aſſes*, which were a comely Animal, eaſily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offenſive Smell, ſtrong enough for Labour, although they yield to the other in Agility of Body; and if their Braying be no agreeable Sound, it is far preferable to the horrible Howlings of the *Yahoos*.

SEVERAL others declared their Sentiments to the ſame

ſame Purpoſe; when my Maſter propoſed an Expedient to the Aſſembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the Hint from me. He approved of the Tradition mentioned by the *Honourable Member*, who ſpoke before; and affirmed, that the two *Yahoos* ſaid to be firſt ſeen among them, had been driven thither over the Sea: That, coming to Land, and being forſaken by their Companions, they retired to the Mountains, and degenerating by Degrees, became in Proceſs of Time, much more ſavage than thoſe of their own Species in the Country from whence theſe two Originals came. The Reaſon of his Aſſertion was, that he had now in his Poſſeſſion, a certain wonderful *Yahoo* (meaning my ſelf) which moſt of them had heard of, and many of them had ſeen. He then related to them, how he firſt found me: That, my Body was all covered with an artificial Compoſure of the Skins and Hairs of other Animals: That, I ſpoke in a Language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs: That, I had related to him the Accidents which brought me thither: That, when he ſaw me without my Covering, I was an exact *Yahoo* in every Part, only of a whiter Colour, leſs hairy, and with ſhorter Claws. He added, how I had endeavoured to perſuade him, that in my own and other Countries, the *Yahoos* acted as the governing, rational Animal, and held the *Houyhnhnms* in Servitude: That, he obſerved in me, all the Qualities of a *Yahoo*, only a little more civilized by ſome Tincture of Reaſon; which however, was in a Degree as far inferior to the *Houyhnhnm* Race, as the *Yahoos* of their Country were to me: That, among other Things, I mentioned a Cuſtom we had of *caſtrating Houyhnhnms* when they were young, in order to render them tame; that the Operation

was

Digitized by Google

was eaſy and ſafe: That, it was no Shame to learn Wiſdom from Brutes, as Induſtry is taught by the Ant, and Building by the Swallow: (For ſo I tranſlate the Word *Lyhannh*, although it be a much larger Fowl) That, this Invention might be practiſed upon the younger *Yahoos* here, which, beſides rendering them tractable and fitter for Uſe, would in an Age, put an End to the whole Species, without deſtroying Life: That, in the mean Time, the *Houyhnhnms* ſhould be *exhorted* to cultivate the Breed of Aſſes, which, as they are in all Reſpects more valuable Brutes, ſo they have this Advantage, to be fit for Service at five Years old, which the others are not until Twelve.

THIS was all my Maſter thought fit to tell me at that Time, of what paſſed in the Grand Council. But, he was pleaſed to conceal one Particular, which related perſonally to my ſelf, whereof I ſoon felt the unhappy Effect, as the Reader will know in its proper Place, and from whence I date all the ſucceeding Misfortunes of my Life.

THE *Houyhnhnms* have no Letters, and conſequently, their Knowledge is all traditional. But, there happening few Events of any Moment among a People ſo well united, naturally diſpoſed to every Virtue, wholly governed by Reaſon, and cut off from all Commerce with other Nations; the hiſtorical Part is eaſily preſerved without burthening their Memories. I have already obſerved, that they are ſubject to no Diſeaſes, and therefore can have no Need of Phyſicians. However, they have excellent Medicines, compoſed of Herbs, to cure accidental Bruiſes and Cuts in the Paſtern or Frog of the Foot by ſharp Stones, as well as other Maims and Hurts in the ſeveral Parts of the Body.

THEY calculate the Year by the Revolution of

Digitized by Google

the Sun and Moon, but uſe no Subdiviſions into Weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the Motions of thoſe two Luminaries, and underſtand the Nature of *Eclipſes*; and this is the utmoſt Progreſs of their *Aſtronomy*.

IN *Poetry*, they muſt be allowed to excel all other Mortals; wherein the Juſtneſs of their Similes, and the Minuteneſs, as well as Exactneſs of their Deſcriptions, are indeed, inimitable. Their Verſes abound very much in both of theſe; and uſually contain either ſome exalted Notions of Friendſhip and Benevolence, or the Praiſes of thoſe who were Victors in Races, and other bodily Exerciſes. Their Buildings, although very rude and ſimple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all Injuries of Cold and Heat. They have a Kind of Tree, which at forty Years old looſens in the Root, and falls with the firſt Storm; it grows very ſtrait, and being pointed like Stakes with a ſharp Stone, (for the *Houyhnhnms* know not the Uſe of Iron) they ſtick them erect in the Ground about ten Inches aſunder, and then weave in Oat-ſtraw, or ſometimes Wattles betwixt them. The Roof is made after the ſame Manner, and ſo are the Doors.

THE *Houyhnhnms* uſe the hollow Part between the Paſtern and the Hoof of their Fore-feet, as we do our Hands, and this with greater Dexterity, than I could at firſt imagine. I have ſeen a white Mare of our Family thread a Needle (which I lent her on Purpoſe) with that Joint. They milk their Cows, reap their Oats, and do all the Work which requires Hands, in the ſame Manner. They have a Kind of hard Flints, which by grinding againſt other Stones, they form into Inſtruments, that ſerve inſtead of Wedges, Axes, and Hammers. With

Tools

Tools made of these Flints, they likewise cut their Hay, and reap their Oats, which there groweth naturally in several Fields: The *Yahoos* draw home the Sheaves in Carriages, and the Servants tread them in certain covered Hutts, to get out the Grain, which is kept in Stores. They make a rude Kind of earthen and wooden Vessels, and bake the former in the Sun.

IF they can avoid Casualties, they die only of old Age, and are buried in the obscurest Places that can be found, their Friends and Relations expressing neither Joy nor Grief at their Departure; nor does the dying Person discover the least Regret that he is leaving the World, any more than if he were upon returning home from a Visit to one of his Neighbours. I remember, my Master having once made an Appointment with a Friend and his Family, to come to his House upon some Affair of Importance; on the Day fixed, the Mistress and her two Children came very late; she made two Excuses, first for her Husband, who, as she said, happened that very Morning to *Lhuwolh*. The Word is strongly expressed in their Language, but not easily rendered into *English*; it signifies, *to retire to his first Mother*. Her Excuse for not coming sooner, was, that her Husband dying late in the Morning, she was a good while consulting her Servants about a convenient Place where his Body should be laid; and I observed, she behaved her self at our House, as chearfully as the rest: She died about three Months after.

THEY live generally to seventy or seventy-five Years, very seldom to Fourscore: Some Weeks before their Death, they feel a gradual Decay, but without Pain. During this Time, they are much visited by their Friends, because they cannot go

Digitized by Google

abroad with their uſual Eaſe and Satisfaction However, about ten Days before their Death, which they ſeldom fail in computing, they return the Viſits that have been made them by thoſe who are neareſt in the Neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient Sledge drawn by *Yahoos*; which Vehicle they uſe, not only upon this Occaſion, but when they grow old, upon long Journies, or when they are lamed by any Accident. And therefore, when the dying *Houyhnhnms* return thoſe Viſits, they take a ſolemn Leave of their Friends, as if they were going to ſome remote Part of the Country, where they deſigned to paſs the reſt of their Lives.

I KNOW not whether it may be worth obſerving, that the *Houyhnhnms* have no Word in their Language to expreſs any Thing that is *evil*, except what they borrow from the Deformities or ill Qualities of the *Yahoos*. Thus they denote the Folly of a Servant, an Omiſſion of a Child, a Stone that cuts their Feet, a Continuance of foul or unſeaſonable Weather, and the like, by adding to each, the Epithet of *Yahoo*. For Inſtance, *Hhnm* Yahoo, *Whnaholm* Yahoo, *Ynlhmnawihlma* Yahoo, and an ill contrived Houſe, *Ynholmhnmrohlnw* Yahoo.

I COULD with great Pleaſure enlarge farther upon the Manners and Virtues of this excellent People; but intending in a ſhort Time to publiſh a Volume by it ſelf expreſsly upon that Subject, I refer the Reader thither. And in the mean Time, proceed to relate my own ſad Cataſtrophe.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. X.

The Author's Œconomy and happy Life among the Houyhhhnms. *His great Improvement in Virtue, by converſing with them. Their Converſations. The Author hath Notice given him by his Maſter, that he muſt depart from the Country. He falls into a Swoon for Grief, but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a Canoo, by the Help of a Fellow-Servant; and puts to Sea at a Venture.*

I HAD ſettled my little Œconomy to my own Heart's Content. My Maſter had ordered a Room to be made for me after their Manner, about ſix Yards from the Houſe; the Sides and Floors of which I plaiſtered with Clay, and covered with Ruſh-Mats of my own contriving: I had beaten Hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a Sort of Ticking: This I filled with the Feathers of ſeveral Birds I had taken with Springes made of *Yahoos* Hairs; and were excellent Food. I had worked two Chairs with my Knife, the Sorrel Nag helping me in the groſſer and more laborious Part. When my Cloaths were worn to Rags,

Rags, I made my ſelf others with the Skins of Rabbets, and of a certain beautiful Animal about the ſame Size, called *Nnuhnoh*, the Skin of which is covered with a fine Down. Of theſe I likewiſe made very tolerable Stockings. I ſoaled my Shoes with Wood, which I cut from a Tree, and fitted to the upper Leather, and when this was worn out, I ſupplied it with the Skins of *Yahoos*, dried in the Sun. I often got Honey out of hollow Trees, which I mingled with Water, or eat it with my Bread. No Man could more verify the Truth of theſe two Maxims: *That, Nature is very eaſily ſatisfied*; and, *That Neceſſity is the Mother of Invention.* I enjoyed perfect Health of Body, and Tranquility of Mind; I did not feel the Treachery or Inconſtancy of a Friend, nor the Injuries of a ſecret or open Enemy. I had no Occaſion of bribing, flattering or pimping, to procure the Favour of any great Man, or of his Minion. I wanted no Fence againſt Fraud or Oppreſſion: Here was neither Phyſician to deſtroy my Body, nor Lawyer to ruin my Fortune: No Informer to watch my Words and Actions, or forge Accuſations againſt me for Hire: Here were no Gibers, Cenſurers, Backbiters, Pickpockets, Highwaymen, Houſe-breakers, Attorneys, Bawds, Buffoons, Gameſters, Politicians, Wits, Spleneticks, tedious Talkers, Controvertiſts, Raviſhers, Murderers, Robbers, Virtuoſoes; no Leaders or Followers of Party and Faction; no Encouragers to Vice, by Seducement or Examples: No Dungeon, Axes, Gibbets, Whipping-poſts, or Pillories: No cheating Shop-keepers or Mechanicks: No Pride, Vanity or Affectation: No Fops, Bullies, Drunkards, ſtrolling Whores, or Poxes: No ranting, lewd expenſive Wives: No ſtupid, proud Pedants: No importunate, over-bearing, quarrelſome

Digitized by Google

ſome, noiſy, roaring, empty, conceited, ſwearing Companions: No Scoundrels raiſed from the Duſt upon the Merit of their Vices; or Nobility thrown into it, on Account of their Virtues: No Lords, Fiddlers, Judges, or Dancing-Maſters.

I HAD the Favour of being admitted to ſeveral *Houyhnhnms*, who came to viſit or dine with my Maſter; where his Honour graciouſly ſuffered me to wait in the Room, and liſten to their Diſcourſe. Both he and his Company would often condeſcend to aſk me Queſtions, and receive my Anſwers. I had alſo, ſometimes, the Honour of attending my Maſter in his Viſits to others. I never preſumed to ſpeak, except in Anſwer to a Queſtion; and then I did it with inward Regret, becauſe it was a Loſs of ſo much Time for improving my ſelf: But, I was infinitely delighted with the Station of an humble Auditor in ſuch Converſations, where nothing paſſed but what was uſeful, expreſſed in the feweſt and moſt ſignificant Words: Where (as I have already ſaid) the greateſt *Decency* was obſerved, without the leaſt Degree of Ceremony; where no Perſon ſpoke without being pleaſed himſelf, and pleaſing his Companions: Where there was no Interruption, Tediouſneſs, Heat, or Difference of Sentiments. They have a Notion, That when People are met together, a ſhort Silence doth much improve Converſation: This I found to be true; for during thoſe little Intermiſſions of Talk, new Ideas would ariſe in their Minds, which very much enlivened the Diſcourſe. Their Subjects are generally on Friendſhip and Benevolence; on Order and Œconomy; ſometimes upon the viſible Operations of Nature, or ancient Traditions; upon the Bounds and Limits of Virtue; upon the unerring Rules of Reaſon; or upon ſome Determinations,

Digitized by Google

ons, to be taken at the next great Aſſembly; and often upon the various Excellencies of *Poetry*. I may add, without Vanity, that my Preſence often gave them ſufficient Matter for Diſcourſe, becauſe it afforded my Maſter an Occaſion of letting his Friends into the Hiſtory of me and my Country, upon which they were all pleaſed to deſcant in a Manner not very advantageous to human Kind; and for that Reaſon, I ſhall not repeat what they ſaid: Only I may be allowed to obſerve, That his Honour, to my great Admiration, appeared to underſtand the Nature of *Yahoos* much better than my ſelf. He went through all our Vices and Follies, and diſcovered many which I had never mentioned to him; by only ſuppoſing what Qualities a *Yahoo* of their Country, with a ſmall Proportion of Reaſon, might be capable of exerting: And concluded, with too much Probability, how vile as well as miſerable ſuch a Creature muſt be.

I FREELY confeſs, that all the little Knowledge I have of any Value, was acquired by the Lectures I received from my Maſter, and from hearing the Diſcourſes of him and his Friends; to which I ſhould be prouder to liſten, than to dictate to the greateſt and wiſeſt Aſſembly in *Europe*. I admired the Strength, Comelineſs and Speed of the Inhabitants; and ſuch a Conſtellation of Virtues in ſuch amiable Perſons, produced in me the higheſt Veneration. At firſt, indeed, I did not feel that natural Awe, which the *Yahoos* and all other Animals, bear towards them; but it grew upon me by Degrees, much ſooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a reſpectful Love and Gratitude, that they would condeſcend to diſtinguiſh me from the reſt of my Species.

WHEN

WHEN I thought of my Family, my Friends, my Countrymen, or human Race in general, I conſidered them as they really were, *Yahoos* in Shape and Diſpoſition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the Gift of Speech; but making no other Uſe of Reaſon, than to improve and multiply thoſe Vices, whereof their Brethren in this Country, had only the Share that Nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the Reflection of my own Form in a Lake or Fountain, I turned away my Face in Horror and Deteſtation of myſelf; and could better endure the Sight of a common *Yahoo*, than of my own Perſon. By converſing with the *Houyhnhnms*, and looking upon them with Delight, I fell to imitate their Gait and Geſture, which is now grown into a Habit; and my Friends often tell me in a blunt Way, that *I trot like a Horſe*; which, however, I take for a great Compliment: Neither ſhall I diſown, that in ſpeaking I am apt to fall into the Voice and Manner of the *Houyhnhnms*, and hear my ſelf ridiculed on that Account without the leaſt Mortification.

IN the Midſt of this Happineſs, when I looked upon my ſelf to be fully ſettled for Life, my Maſter ſent for me one Morning a little earlier than his uſual Hour. I obſerved by his Countenance, that he was in ſome Perplexity, and at a Loſs how to begin what he had to ſpeak. After a ſhort Silence, he told me, he did not know how I would take what he was going to ſay: That, in the laſt general Aſſembly, when the Affair of the *Yahoos* was entered upon, the Repreſentatives had taken Offence at his keeping a *Yahoo* (meaning my ſelf) in his Family, more like a *Houyhnhnm* than a Brute Animal: That, he was known frequently to converſe

Digitized by Google

verſe with me, as if he could receive ſome Advantage or Pleaſure in my Company: That, ſuch a Practice was not agreeable to Reaſon or Nature, or a Thing ever heard of before among them. The Aſſembly did therefore *exhort* him, either to employ me like the reſt of my Species, or command me to ſwim back to the Place from whence I came: That, the firſt of theſe Expedients was utterly rejected by all the *Houyhnhnms*, who had ever ſeen me at his Houſe or their own: For, they alledged, That becauſe I had ſome Rudiments of Reaſon, added to the natural Pravity of thoſe Animals, it was to be feared, I might be able to ſeduce them into the woody and mountainous Parts of the Country, and bring them in Troops by Night to deſtroy the *Houyhnhnms* Cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous Kind, and averſe from Labour.

MY Maſter added, That he was daily preſſed by the *Houyhnhnms* of the Neighbourhood to have the Aſſembly's *Exhortation* executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted, it would be impoſſible for me to ſwim to another Country; and therefore wiſhed I would contrive ſome Sort of Vehicle reſembling thoſe I had deſcribed to him, that might carry me on the Sea; in which Work I ſhould have the Aſſiſtance of his own Servants, as well as thoſe of his Neighbours. He concluded, that for his own Part he could have been content to keep me in his Service as long as I lived; becauſe he found I had cured myſelf of ſome bad Habits and Diſpoſitions, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior Nature was capable, to imitate the *Houyhnhnms*.

I SHOULD here obſerve to the Reader, that a Decree of the general Aſſembly in this Country, is expreſſed by the Word *Hnhloayn*, which ſignifies an

an *Exhortation*; as near as I can render it: For they have no Conception how a rational Creature can be *compelled*, but only adviſed, or *exhorted*; becauſe no Perſon can diſobey Reaſon, without giving up his Claim to be a rational Creature.

I WAS ſtruck with the utmoſt Grief and Deſpair at my Maſter's Diſcourſe; and being unable to ſupport the Agonies I was under, I fell into a Swoon at his Feet: When I came to myſelf, he told me, that he concluded I had been dead. (For theſe People are ſubject to no ſuch Imbecillities of Nature) I anſwered, in a faint Voice, that Death would have been too great a Happineſs: That, although I could not blame the Aſſembly's *Exhortation*, or the Urgency of his Friends; yet, in my weak and corrupt Judgment, I thought it might conſiſt with Reaſon to have been leſs rigorous: That, I could not ſwim a League, and probably the neareſt Land to theirs might be diſtant above an Hundred: That, many Materials, neceſſary for making a ſmall Veſſel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this Country; which, however, I would attempt in Obedience and Gratitude to his Honour, although I concluded the Thing to be impoſſible, and therefore looked on my ſelf as already devoted to Deſtruction: That, the certain Proſpect of an unnatural Death, was the leaſt of my Evils: For, ſuppoſing I ſhould eſcape with Life by ſome ſtrange Adventure, how could I think with Temper, of paſſing my Days among *Yahoos*, and relapſing into my old Corruptions, for want of Examples to lead and keep me within the Paths of Virtue: That, I knew too well upon what ſolid Reaſons all the Determinations of the wiſe *Houyhnhnms* were founded, not to be ſhaken by Arguments of mine, a miſerable *Yahoo*; and therefore,

Digitized by Google

therefore, after preſenting him with my humble Thanks for the Offer of his Servants Aſſiſtance in making a Veſſel, and deſiring a reaſonable Time for ſo difficult a Work, I told him, I would endeavour to preſerve a wretched Being; and, if ever I returned to *England*, was not without Hopes of being uſeful to my own Species, by celebrating the Praiſes of the renowned *Houyhnhnms*, and propoſing their Virtues to the Imitation of Mankind.

MY Maſter in a few Words made me a very gracious Reply, allowed me the Space of two *Months* to finiſh my Boat; and ordered the Sorrel Nag, my Fellow-Servant, (for ſo at this Diſtance I may preſume to call him) to follow my Inſtructions, becauſe I told my Maſter, that his Help would be ſufficient, and I knew he had a Tenderneſs for me.

IN his Company my firſt Buſineſs was to go to that Part of the Coaſt, where my rebellious Crew had ordered me to be ſet on Shore. I got upon a Height, and looking on every Side into the Sea, fancied I ſaw a ſmall Iſland, towards the *North-Eaſt*: I took out my Pocket-Glaſs, and could then clearly diſtinguiſh it about five Leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the Sorrel Nag to be only a blue Cloud: For, as he had no Conception of any Country beſide his own, ſo he could not be as expert in diſtinguiſhing remote Objects at Sea, as we who ſo much converſe in that Element.

AFTER I had diſcovered this Iſland, I conſidered no farther; but reſolved, if poſſible, be the firſt Place of my Baniſhment, leaving the Conſequence to Fortune.

I RETURNED home, and conſulting with the Sorrel Nag, we went into a Copſe at ſome Diſtance, where I with my Knife, and he with a ſharp Flint faſtened

Digitized by Google

faſtened very artificially, after their Manner, to a wooden Handle, cut down ſeveral Oak Wattles about the Thickneſs of a walking Staff, and ſome larger Pieces. But I ſhall not trouble the Reader with a particular Deſcription of my own Mechanicks: Let it ſuffice to ſay, that in ſix Weeks Time, with the Help of the Sorrel Nag, who performed the Parts that required moſt Labour, I finiſhed a Sort of *Indian* Canoo, but much larger, covering it with the Skins of *Yahoos* well ſtitched together, with hempen Threads of my own makeing. My Sail was likewiſe compoſed of the Skins of the ſame Animal; but I made Uſe of the youngeſt I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewiſe provided my ſelf with four Paddles. I laid in a Stock of boiled Fleſh, of Rabbets and Fowls; and took with me two Veſſels, one filled with Milk, and the other with Water.

I TRIED my Canoo in a large Pond near my Maſter's Houſe, and then corrected in it what was amiſs; ſtopping all the Chinks with *Yahoos* Tallow, until I found it ſtanch, and able to bear me, and my Freight. And when it was as compleat as I could poſſibly make it, I had it drawn on a Carriage very gently by *Yahoos*, to the Sea-ſide, under the Conduct of the Sorrel Nag, and another Servant.

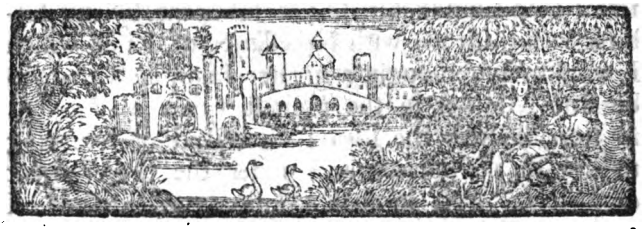
WHEN all was ready, and the Day came for my Departure, I took Leave of my Maſter and Lady, and the whole Family, mine Eyes flowing with Tears, and my Heart quite ſunk with Grief. But his Honour, out of Curioſity, and perhaps (if I may ſpeak it without Vanity) partly out of Kindneſs, was determined to ſee me in my Canoo; and got ſeveral of his neighbouring Friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an

Digitized by Google

Hour for the Tide, and then obſerving the Wind very fortunately bearing towards the Iſland, to which I intended to ſteer my Courſe, I took a ſecond Leave of my Maſter: But, as I was going to proſtrate my ſelf to kiſs his Hoof, he did me the Honour to raiſe it gently to my Mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been cenſured for mentioning this laſt Particular. Detractors are pleaſed to think it improbable, that ſo illuſtrious a Perſon ſhould deſcend to give ſo great a Mark of Diſtinction to a Creature ſo inferior as I. Neither have I forgot, how apt ſome Travellers are to boaſt of extraordinary Favours they have received. But, if theſe Cenſurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous Diſpoſition of the *Houyhnhnms*, they would ſoon change their Opinion.

I PAID my Reſpects to the reſt of the *Houyhnhnms* in his Honour's Company; then getting into my Canoo, I puſhed off from Shore.

CHAP.



CHAP. XI.

The Author's dangerous Voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, *hoping to settle there. Is wounded with an Arrow by one of the Natives. Is seized and carried by Force into a* Portugueze *Ship. The great Civilities of the Captain. The Author arrives at* ENGLAND.

I BEGAN this desperate Voyage on *February* 15, 171⅓, at nine o'Clock in the Morning. The Wind was very favourable; however, I made Use at first only of my Paddles; but considering I should soon be weary, and that the Wind might probably chop about, I ventured to set up my little Sail; and thus, with the Help of the Tide, I went at the Rate of a League and a Half an Hour, as near as I could guess. My Master and his Friends continued on the Shore, until I was almost out of Sight; and I often heard the Sorrel Nag (who always loved me) crying out, *Hnuy illa nyha maiah Yahoo*, Take Care of thy self, gentle *Yahoo*.

My

MY Deſign was, if poſſible, to diſcover ſome ſmall Iſland uninhabited, yet ſufficient by my Labour to furniſh me with Neceſſaries of Life, which I would have thought a greater Happineſs than to be firſt Miniſter in the politeſt Court of *Europe*; ſo horrible was the Idea I conceived of returning to live in the Society and under the Government of *Yahoos*. For, in ſuch a Solitude as I deſired, I could at leaſt enjoy my own Thoughts, and reflect with Delight on the Virtues of thoſe inimitable *Houyhnhnms*, without any Opportunity of degenerating into the Vices and Corruptions of my own Species.

THE Reader may remember what I related when my Crew conſpired againſt me, and confined me to my Cabbin. How I continued there ſeveral Weeks, without knowing what Courſe we took; and when I was put aſhore in the Long-Boat, how the Sailors told me with Oaths, whether true or falſe, that they knew not in what Part of the World we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten Degrees *Southward* of the *Cape of Good Hope*, or about 45 Degrees *Southern* Latitude, as I gathered from ſome general Words I overheard among them, being I ſuppoſed to the *South-Eaſt* in their intended Voyage to *Madagaſcar*. And, although this were but little better than Conjecture, yet I reſolved to ſteer my Courſe *Eaſtward*, hoping to reach the *South-Weſt* Coaſt of *New-Holland*, and perhaps ſome ſuch Iſland as I deſired, lying *Weſtward* of it. The Wind was full *Weſt*, and by ſix in the Evening, I computed I had gone *Eaſtward* at leaſt eighteen Leagues; when I ſpied a very ſmall Iſland about half a League off, which I ſoon reached. It was nothing but a Rock with one Creek, naturally arched by the Force of Tempeſts.

Digitized by Google

peſts. Here I put in my Canoo, and climbing a Part of the Rock, I could plainly diſcover Land to the *Eaſt*, extending from *South* to *North*. I lay all Night in my Canoo; and repeating my Voyage early in the Morning, I arrived in ſeven Hours to the *South-Eaſt* Point of *New-Holland*. This confirmed me in the Opinion I have long entertained, that the *Maps* and *Charts* place this Country at leaſt three Degrees more to the *Eaſt* than it really is; which Thought I communicated many Years ago to my worthy Friend Mr. *Herman Moll*, and gave him my Reaſons for it, although he hath rather choſen to follow other Authors.

I SAW no Inhabitants in the Place where I landed; and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing far into the Country. I found ſome Shell Fiſh on the Shore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a Fire, for fear of being diſcovered by the Natives. I continued three Days feeding on Oyſters and Limpits, to ſave my own Proviſions; and I fortunately found a Brook of excellent Water, which gave me great Relief.

ON the fourth Day, venturing out early a little too far, I ſaw twenty or thirty Natives upon a Height, not above five hundred Yards from me. They were ſtark naked, Men, Women, and Children, round a Fire, as I could diſcover by the Smoke. One of them ſpied me, and gave Notice to the reſt; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the Women and Children at the Fire. I made what Haſte I could to the Shore, and getting into my Canoo, ſhoved off: The Savages obſerveing me retreat, ran after me; and before I could get far enough into the Sea, diſcharged an Arrow, which wounded me deeply on the Inſide of my Left Knee (I ſhall carry the Mark to my Grave.)

I apprehended the Arrow might be poiſoned; and paddling out of the Reach of their Darts (being a calm Day) I made a Shift to ſuck the Wound, and dreſs it as well as I could.

I WAS at a Loſs what to do, for I durſt not return to the ſame Landing Place, but ſtood to the *North*, and was forced to paddle; for the Wind, although very gentle, was againſt me, blowing *North-Weſt*. As I was looking about for a ſecure Landing Place, I ſaw a Sail to the *North North-Eaſt*, which appearing every Minute more viſible, I was in ſome Doubt, whether I ſhould wait for them or no; but at laſt my Deteſtation of the *Yahoo* Race prevailed; and turning my Canoo, I ſailed and paddled together to the *South*, and got into the ſame Creek from whence I ſet out in the Morning; chooſing rather to truſt my ſelf among theſe *Barbarians*, than live with *European Yahoos*. I drew up my Canoo as cloſe as I could to the Shore, and hid my ſelf behind a Stone by the little Brook, which, as I have already ſaid, was excellent Water.

THE Ship came within half a League of this Creek, and ſent out her Long-Boat with Veſſels to take in freſh Water (for the Place it ſeems was very well known) but I did not obſerve it until the Boat was almoſt on Shore; and it was too late to ſeek another Hiding Place. The Seamen at their landing obſerved my Canoo, and rummaging it all over, eaſily conjectured that the Owner could not be far off. Four of them well armed, ſearched every Cranny and Lurking Hole, until at laſt they found me flat on my Face behind the Stone. They gazed a while in Admiration at my ſtrange uncouth Dreſs; my Coat made of Skins, my wooden-ſoaled Shoes, and my furred Stockings; from whence, however,

Digitized by Google

however, they concluded I was not a Native of the Place, who all go naked. One of the Seamen in *Portugueze* bid me riſe, and aſked who I was. I underſtood that Language very well, and getting upon my Feet, ſaid, I was a poor *Yahoo*, baniſhed from the *Houyhnhnms*, and deſired they would pleaſe to let me depart. They admired to hear me anſwer them in their own Tongue, and ſaw by my Complexion I muſt be an *European*; but were at a Loſs to know what I meant by *Yahoos* and *Houyhnhnms*; and at the ſame Time fell a laughing at my ſtrange Tone in ſpeaking, which reſembled the neighing of a Horſe. I trembled all the while betwixt Fear and Hatred: I again deſired Leave to depart, and was gently moving to my Canoo; but they laid hold on me, deſiring to know what Country I was of? Whence I came? With many other Queſtions. I told them I was born in *England*, from whence I came about five Years ago, and then their Country and ours was at Peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an Enemy, ſince I meant them no Harm, but was a poor *Yahoo*, ſeeking ſome deſolate Place where to paſs the Remainder of my unfortunate Life.

WHEN they began to talk, I thought I never heard or ſaw any Thing ſo unnatural; for it appeared to me as monſtrous as if a Dog or a Cow ſhould ſpeak in *England*, or a *Yahoo* in *Houyhnhnmland*. The honeſt *Portugueze* were equally amazed at my ſtrange Dreſs, and the odd Manner of delivering my Words, which however they underſtood very well. They ſpoke to me with great Humanity, and ſaid they were ſure their Captain would carry me *gratis* to *Lisbon*, from whence I might return to my own Country: That, two of the

Seamen would go back to the Ship, to inform the Captain of what they had ſeen, and receive his Orders; in the mean Time, unleſs I would give my ſolemn Oath not to fly, they would ſecure me by Force. I thought it beſt to comply with their Propoſal. They were very curious to know my Story, but I gave them very little Satisfaction; and they all conjectured, that my Misfortunes had impaired my Reaſon. In two Hours the Boat, which went loaden with Veſſels of Water, returned with the Captain's Commands to fetch me on Board. I fell on my Knees to preſerve my Liberty; but all was in vain, and the Men having tied me with Cords, heaved me into the Boat, from whence I was taken into the Ship, and from thence into the Captain's Cabbin.

HIS Name was *Pedro de Mendez*; he was a very courteous and generous Perſon; he entreated me to give ſome Account of my ſelf, and deſired to know what I would eat or drink; ſaid, I ſhould be uſed as well as himſelf, and ſpoke ſo many obliging Things, that I wondered to find ſuch Civilities from a *Yahoo*. However, I remained ſilent and ſullen; I was ready to faint at the very Smell of him and his Men. At laſt I deſired ſomething to eat out of my own Canoo; but he ordered me a Chicken and ſome excellent Wine, and then directed that I ſhould be put to Bed in a very clean Cabbin. I would not undreſs my ſelf, but lay on the Bed Cloaths; and in half an Hour ſtole out, when I thought the Crew was at Dinner; and getting to the Side of the Ship, was going to leap into the Sea, and ſwim for my Life, rather than continue among *Yahoos*: But one of the Seamen prevented me, and having informed the Captain, I was chained to my Cabbin.

AFTER

Digitized by Google

AFTER Dinner *Don Pedro* came to me, and desired to know my Reason for so desperate an Attempt; assured me he only meant to do me all the Service he was able; and spoke so very movingly, that at last I descended to treat him like an Animal which had some little Portion of Reason. I gave him a very short Relation of my Voyage; of the Conspiracy against me by my own Men; of the Country where they set me on Shore; and of my five Years Residence there. All which he looked upon as if it were a Dream or a Vision; whereat I took great Offence: For I had quite forgot the Faculty of Lying, so peculiar to *Yahoos* in all Countries where they preside, and consequently the Disposition of suspecting Truth in others of their own Species. I asked him, Whether it were the Custom of his Country to *say the Thing that was not?* I assured him I had almost forgot what he meant by Falshood; and if I had lived a thousand Years in *Houyhnhnmland*, I should never have heard a Lie from the meanest Servant: That, I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no; but however, in Return for his Favours, I would give so much Allowance to the Corruption of his Nature, as to answer any Objection he would please to make; and he might easily discover the Truth.

THE Captain, a wise Man, after many Endeavours to catch me tripping in some Part of my Story, at last began to have a better Opinion of my Veracity. But he added, that since I professed so inviolable an Attachment to Truth, I must give him my Word of Honour to bear him Company in this Voyage, without attempting any Thing against my Life; or else he would continue me a Prisoner until we arrived at *Lisbon*. I gave him the

Digitized by Google

the Promiſe he required; but at the ſame Time proteſted, that I would ſuffer the greateſt Hardſhips rather than return to live among *Yahoos*.

Our Voyage paſſed without any conſiderable Accident. In Gratitude to the Captain I ſometimes ſate with him at his earneſt Requeſt, and ſtrove to conceal my Antipathy againſt human Kind, although it often broke out; which he ſuffered to paſs without Obſervation. But the greateſt Part of the Day, I confined my ſelf to my Cabbin, to avoid ſeeing any of the Crew. The Captain had often intreated me to ſtrip myſelf of my Savage Dreſs, and offered to lend me the beſt Suit of Cloaths he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myſelf with any Thing that had been on the Back of a *Yahoo*. I only deſired he would lend me two clean Shirts, which having been waſhed ſince he wore them, I believed would not ſo much defile me. Theſe I changed every ſecond Day, and waſhed them my ſelf.

We arrived at *Liſbon*, *Nov.* 5, 1715. At our landing, the Captain forced me to cover my ſelf with his Cloak, to prevent the Rabble from crouding about me. I was conveyed to his own Houſe; and at my earneſt Requeſt, he led me up to the higheſt Room backwards. I conjured him to conceal from all Perſons what I had told him of the *Houyhnhnms*; becauſe the leaſt Hint of ſuch a Story, would not only draw Numbers of People to ſee me, but probably put me in Danger of being impriſoned, or burnt by the *Inquiſition*. The Captain perſuaded me to accept a Suit of Cloaths newly made; but I would not ſuffer the Taylor to take my Meaſure; however, Don *Pedro* being almoſt of my Size, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred

Digitized by Google

accoutred me with other Neceſſaries all new, which I aired for twenty four Hours before I would uſe them.

The Captain had no Wife, nor above three Servants, none of which were ſuffered to attend at Meals; and his whole Deportment was ſo obliging, added to very good *human* Underſtanding, that I really began to tolerate his Company. He gained ſo far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back Window. By Degrees I was brought into another Room, from whence I peeped into the Street, but drew my Head back in a Fright. In a Week's Time he ſeduced me down to the Door. I found my Terror gradually leſſened, but my Hatred and Contempt ſeemed to increaſe. I was at laſt bold enough to walk the Street in his Company, but kept my Noſe well ſtopped with Rue, or ſometimes with Tobacco.

In ten Days, Don *Pedro*, to whom I had given ſome Account of my domeſtick Affairs, put it upon me as a Point of Honour and Conſcience, that I ought to return to my native Country, and live at Home with my Wife and Children. He told me, there was an *Engliſh* Ship in the Port, juſt ready to ſail, and he would furniſh me with all Things neceſſary. It would be tedious to repeat his Arguments, and my Contradictions. He ſaid, it was altogether impoſſible to find ſuch a ſolitary Iſland as I had deſired to live in; but I might command in my own Houſe, and paſs my Time in a Manner as recluſe as I pleaſed.

I complied at laſt, finding I could not do better. I left *Lisbon* the 24th Day of *November*, in an *Engliſh* Merchant-Man, but who was the Maſter I never inquired. Don *Pedro* accompanied me to the Ship, and lent me twenty Pounds. He took

kind

kind Leave of me, and embraced me at parting; which I bore as well as I could. During this last Voyage I had no Commerce with the Master, or any of his Men; but pretending I was sick, kept close in my Cabbin. On the fifth of *December*, 1715, we cast Anchor in the *Downs* about nine in the Morning, and at three in the Afternoon I got safe to my House at *Redriff*.

My Wife and Family received me with great Surprize and Joy, because they concluded me certainly dead; but I must freely confess, the Sight of them filled me only with Hatred, Disgust and Contempt; and the more, by reflecting on the near Alliance I had to them. For, although since my unfortunate Exile from the *Houyhnhnm* Country, I had compelled my self to tolerate the Sight of *Yahoos*, and to converse with Don *Pedro de Mendez*; yet my Memory and Imaginations were perpetually filled with the Virtues and Ideas of those exalted *Houyhnhnms*. And when I began to consider, that by copulating with one of the *Yahoo* Species, I had become a Parent of more; it struck me with the utmost Shame, Confusion, and Horror.

As soon as I entered the House, my Wife took me in her Arms, and kissed me; at which, having not been used to the Touch of that odious Animal for so many Years, I fell in a Swoon for almost an Hour. At the Time I am writing, it is five Years since my last Return to *England*: During the first Year I could not endure my Wife or Children in my Presence, the very Smell of them was intolerable; much less could I suffer them to eat in the same Room. To this Hour they dare not presume to touch my Bread, or drink out of the same Cup; neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the Hand. The first Money

Digitized by Google

I laid out was to buy two young Stone Horſes, which I keep in a good Stable, and next to them the Groom is my greateſt Favourite; for I feel my Spirits revived by the Smell he contracts in the Stable. My Horſes underſtand me tolerably well; I converſe with them at leaſt four Hours every Day. They are Strangers to Bridle or Saddle; they live in great Amity with me, and Friendſhip to each other.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

The Author's Veracity. His Design in publishing this Work. His Censure of those Travellers who swerve from the Truth. The Author clears himself from any sinister Ends in Writing. An Objection answered. The Method of planting Colonies. His Native Country commended. The Right of the Crown to those Countries described by the Author, is justified. The Difficulty of conquering them. The Author taketh his last Leave of the Reader; proposeth his Manner of Living for the future; gives good Advice, and concludeth.

THUS, gentle Reader, I have given thee a faithful History of my Travels for fifteen Years and above seven Months; wherein I have not been so studious of Ornament as of Truth. I could perhaps, like others, have astonished thee with strange improbable Tales; but, I rather chose to relate plain Matter of Fact in the simplest Manner and Style; because my principal Design was to inform, and not to amuse thee.

It is easy for us who travel into remote Countries, which are seldom visited by *Englishmen* or other *Europeans*, to form Descriptions of wonderful Animals both at Sea and Land. Whereas, a Traveller's

Digitized by Google

Traveller's chief Aim ſhould be to make Men wiſer and better, and to improve their Minds by the bad, as well as good Example of what they deliver concerning foreign Places.

I COULD heartily wiſh a Law were enacted, that every Traveller, before he were permitted to publiſh his Voyages, ſhould be obliged to make Oath before the *Lord High Chancellor*, that all he intended to print was abſolutely true to the beſt of his Knowledge; for, then the World would no longer be deceived as it uſually is, while ſome Writers, to make their Works paſs the better upon the Publick, impoſe the groſſeſt Falſities on the unwary Reader. I have peruſed ſeveral Books of Travels with great Delight in my younger Days; but having ſince gone over moſt Parts of the Globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous Accounts from my own Obſervation; it hath given me a great Diſguſt againſt this Part of Reading, and ſome Indignation to ſee the Credulity of Mankind ſo impudently abuſed. Therefore, ſince my Acquaintance were pleaſed to think my poor Endeavours might not be unacceptable to my Country; I impoſed on my ſelf as a Maxim, never to be ſwerved from, that I would *ſtrictly adhere to Truth*; neither indeed, can I be ever under the leaſt Temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my Mind the Lectures and Example of my noble Maſter, and the other illuſtrious *Houyhnhnms*, of whom I had ſo long the Honour to be an humble Hearer.

——*Nec ſi miſerum Fortuna Sinonem*
Finxit, vanum etiam, mendacemque improba finget.

I KNOW very well, how little Reputation is to be got by Writings which require neither Genius nor Learning,

Learning, nor indeed any other Talent, except a good Memory, or an exact *Journal*. I know likewise, that Writers of Travels, like *Dictionary*-Makers, are ſunk into Oblivion by the Weight and Bulk of thoſe who come laſt, and therefore lie uppermoſt. And, it is highly probable, that ſuch Travellers who ſhall hereafter viſit the Countries deſcribed in this Work of mine, may, by detecting my Errors, (if there be any) and adding many new Diſcoveries of their own, joſtle me out of Vogue, and ſtand in my Place; making the World forget that ever I was an Author. This, indeed, would be too great a Mortification if I wrote for Fame: But, as my ſole Intention was the PUBLICK GOOD, I cannot be altogether diſappointed. For, who can read the Virtues I have mentioned in the glorious *Houyhnhnms*, without being aſhamed of his own Vices, when he conſiders himſelf as the reaſoning, governing Animal of his Country? I ſhall ſay nothing of thoſe remote Nations where *Yahoos* preſide; amongſt which the leaſt corrupted are the *Brobdingnagians*, whoſe wiſe Maxims in Morality and Government, it would be our Happineſs to obſerve. But I forbear deſcanting further, and rather leave the judicious Reader to his own Remarks and Applications.

I AM not a little pleaſed that this Work of mine can poſſibly meet with no Cenſurers: For what Objections can be made againſt a Writer who relates only plain Facts that happened in ſuch diſtant Countries, where we have not the leaſt Intereſt with Reſpect either to Trade or Negociations? I have carefully avoided every Fault with which common Writers of Travels are often too juſtly charged. Beſides, I meddle not the leaſt with any *Party*, but write without Paſſion, Prejudice, or Ill-

will

will againſt any Man or Number of Men whatſoever. I write for the nobleſt End, to inform and inſtruct Mankind, over whom I may, without Breach of Modeſty, pretend to ſome Superiority, from the Advantages I received by converſing ſo long among the moſt accompliſhed *Houyhnhnms*. I write without any View towards Profit or Praiſe. I never ſuffer a Word to paſs that may look like Reflection, or poſſibly give the leaſt Offence even to thoſe who are moſt ready to take it. So that, I hope, I may with Juſtice pronounce my ſelf an Author perfectly blameleſs; againſt whom the Tribes of Anſwerers, Conſiderers, Obſervers, Reflecters, Detecters, Remarkers, will never be able to find Matter for exerciſing their Talents.

I CONFESS, it was whiſpered to me, that I was bound in Duty as a Subject of *England*, to have given in a Memorial to a Secretary of State, at my firſt coming over; becauſe, whatever Lands are diſcovered by a Subject, belong to the Crown. But, I doubt, whether our Conqueſts in the Countries I treat of, would be as eaſy as thoſe of *Ferdinando Cortez*, over the naked *Americans*. The *Lilliputians* I think, are hardly worth the Charge of a Fleet and Army to reduce them; and I queſtion whether it might be prudent or ſafe to attempt the *Brobdingnagians*: Or, whether an *Engliſh* Army would be much at their Eaſe with the Flying Iſland over their Heads. The *Houyhnhnms*, indeed, appear not to be ſo well prepared for War, a Science to which they are perfect Strangers, and eſpecially againſt miſſive Weapons. However, ſuppoſing my ſelf to be a Miniſter of State, I could never give my Advice for invading them. Their Prudence, Unanimity, Unacquaintedneſs with Fear, and their Love of their Country, would amply ſupply

ply all Defects in the Military Art. Imagine twenty thousand of them breaking into the Midst of an *European* Army, confounding the Ranks, overturning the Carriages, battering the Warriors Faces into Mummy, by terrible Yerks from their hinder Hoofs: For they would well deserve the Character given to *Augustus*; *Recalcitrat undique tutus.* But instead of Proposals for conquering that magnanimous Nation, I rather wish they were in a Capacity or Disposition to send a sufficient Number of their Inhabitants for civilizing *Europe*; by teaching us the first Principles of Honour, Justice, Truth, Temperance, publick Spirit, Fortitude, Chastity, Friendship, Benevolence, and Fidelity. The *Names* of all which Virtues are still retained among us in most Languages, and are to be met with in modern as well as ancient Authors; which I am able to affert from my own small Reading.

BUT, I had another Reason which made me less forward to enlarge his Majesty's Dominions by my Discoveries: To say the Truth, I had conceived a few Scruples with relation to the distributive Justice of Princes upon those Occasions. For Instance, A Crew of Pyrates are driven by a Storm they know not whither; at Length a Boy discovers Land from the Top-mast; they go on Shore to rob and plunder; they see an harmless People, are entertained with Kindness, they give the Country a new Name, they take formal Possession of it for the King, they set up a rotten Plank or a Stone for a Memorial, they murder two or three Dozen of the Natives, bring away a Couple more by Force for a Sample, return home, and get their Pardon. Here commenceth a new Dominion acquired with a Title by *Divine Right*. Ships are sent with the first Opportunity; the Natives driven out or destroyed, their

Digitized by Google

their Princes tortured to discover their Gold; a free Licence given to all Acts of Inhumanity and Lust; the Earth reeking with the Blood of its Inhabitants: And this execrable Crew of Butchers employed in so pious an Expedition, is a *modern Colony* sent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous People.

BUT this Description, I confess, doth by no Means affect the *British* Nation, who may be an Example to the whole World for their Wisdom, Care, and Justice in planting Colonies; the liberal Endowments for the Advancement of Religion and Learning; their Choice of devout and able Pastors to propagate *Christianity*; their Caution in stocking their Provinces with People of sober Lives and Conversations from this the Mother Kingdom; their strict Regard to the Distribution of Justice, in supplying the civil Administration through all their Colonies with Officers of the greatest Abilities, utter Strangers to Corruption: And to crown all, by sending the most vigilant and virtuous Governors, who have no other Views than the Happiness of the People over whom they preside, and the Honour of the King their Master.

BUT, as those Countries which I have described do not appear to have a Desire of being conquered, and enslaved, murdered or driven out by Colonies; nor abound either in Gold, Silver, Sugar or Tobacco; I did humbly conceive they were by no Means proper Objects of our Zeal, our Valour, or our Interest. However, if those whom it may concern, think fit to be of another Opinion, I am ready to depose, when I shall be lawfully called, That no *European* did ever visit these Countries before me. I mean, if the Inhabitants ought to be believed.

BUT, as to the Formality of taking Possession in my

Digitized by Google

my Sovereign's Name, it never came once into my Thoughts; and if it had, yet as my Affairs then ſtood, I ſhould perhaps in Point of Prudence and Self-Preſervation, have put it off to a better Opportunity.

Having thus anſwered the *only* Objection that can be raiſed againſt me as a Traveller; I here take a final Leave of my courteous Readers, and return to enjoy my own Speculations in my little Garden at *Redriff*; to apply thoſe excellent Leſſons of Virtue which I learned among the *Houyhnhnms*; to inſtruct the *Yahoos* of my own Family as far as I ſhall find them docible Animals; to behold my Figure often in a Glaſs, and thus, if poſſible, habituate my ſelf, by Time, to tolerate the Sight of a human Creature: To lament the Brutality of *Houyhnhnms* in my own Country, but always treat their Perſons with Reſpect, for the Sake of my noble Maſter, his Family, his Friends, and the whole *Houyhnhnm* Race, whom theſe of ours have the Honour to reſemble in all their Lineaments, however their Intellectuals came to degenerate.

I began laſt Week to permit my Wife to ſit at Dinner with me, at the fartheſt End of a long Table; and to anſwer (but with the utmoſt Brevity) the few Queſtions I aſked her. Yet the Smell of a *Yahoo* continuing very offenſive, I always keep my Noſe well ſtopped with Rue, Lavender, or Tobacco Leaves. And although it be hard for a Man late in Life to remove old Habits; I am not altogether out of Hopes in ſome Time to ſuffer a Neighbour *Yahoo* in my Company, without the Apprehenſions I am yet under of his Teeth or his Claws.

My Reconcilement to the *Yahoo* Kind in general might not be ſo difficult, if they would be content with thoſe Vices and Follies only which Nature hath

* * *

Digitized by Google

hath entitled them to. I am not in the leaſt provoked at the Sight of a Lawyer, a Pick-pocket, a Colonel, a Fool, a Lord, a Gameſter, a Politician, a Whoremonger, a Phyſician, an Evidence, a Suborner, an Attorney, a Traytor, or the like: This is all according to the due Courſe of Things: But, when I behold a Lump of Deformity, and Diſeaſes both in Body and Mind, ſmitten with *Pride*, it immediately breaks all the Meaſures of my Patience; neither ſhall I be ever able to comprehend how ſuch an Animal and ſuch a Vice could tally together. The wiſe and virtuous *Houyhnhnms*, who abound in all Excellencies that can adorn a rational Creature, have no Name for this Vice in their Language, which hath no Terms to expreſs any Thing that is evil, except thoſe whereby they deſcribe the deteſtable Qualities of their *Yahoos*; among which they were not able to diſtinguiſh this of Pride, for want of thoroughly underſtanding humane Nature, as it ſheweth it ſelf in other Countries, where that Animal preſides. But I, who had more Experience, could plainly obſerve ſome Rudiments of it among the wild *Yahoos*.

BUT the *Houyhnhnms*, who live under the Government of Reaſon, are no more proud of the good Qualities they poſſeſs, than I ſhould be for not wanting a Leg or an Arm, which no Man in his Wits would boaſt of, although he muſt be miſerable without them. I dwell the longer upon this Subject from the Deſire I have to make the Society of an *Engliſh Yahoo* by any Means not inſupportable; and therefore, I here intreat thoſe who have any Tincture of this abſurd Vice, that they will not preſume to appear in my Sight.

F I N I S.

Digitized by Google

The three following Poems were written, as we are informed, by Doctor ARBUTHNOT, *Mr.* POPE, *and Mr.* GAY.

TO

QUINBUS FLESTRIN,

THE

MAN-MOUNTAIN.

A

LILLIPUTIAN ODE.

IN Amaze
Loft, I gaze.
Can our Eyes
Reach thy Size?
May my Lays
Swell with Praiſe,
Worthy thee!
Worthy me!

Muſe

Digitized by Google

Muſe inſpire,
All thy Fire!
Bards of old
Of him told,
When they ſaid,
Atlas Head
Propt the Skies:
See! and believe your Eyes!

II.

See him ſtride
Valleys wide:
Over Woods,
Over Floods,
When he treads,
Mountains Heads,
Groan and ſhake:
Armies quake,
Left his Spurn
Overturn
Man and Steed:
Troops take Heed!
Left and Right
Speed your Flight!
Leſt an Hoſt
Beneath his Foot be loſt.

III.

Turn'd aſide,
From his Hide,

Safe from Wound
Darts rebound.
From his Noſe
Clouds he blows:
When he ſpeaks,
Thunder breaks!
When he eats,
Famine threats!
When he drinks,
Neptune ſhrinks!
Nigh thy Ear,
In mid Air,
On thy Hand,
Let me ſtand;
So ſhall I
Lofty Poet! touch the Sky.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE

LAMENTATION

OF

GLUMDALCLITCH,

FOR

The Loſs of GRILDRIG.

A PASTORAL.

SOON as *Glumdalclitch* miſs'd her pleaſing Care,
She wept, ſhe blubber'd, and ſhe tore her Hair.
No *Britiſh* Miſs ſincerer Grief has known,
Her Squirrel miſſing, or her Sparrow flown.
She *furl'd* her Sampler, and *hawl'd* in her Thread,
And ſtuck her Needle into *Grildrig*'s Bed;
Then ſpread her Hands, and with a Bounce let fall
Her Baby, like the Giant in *Guildhall*.
In Peals of Thunder now ſhe roars, and now
She gently whimpers like a lowing Cow:

Yet

Digitized by Google

Yet lovely in her Sorrow ſtill appears:
Her Locks diſhevell'd, and her Flood of Tears
Seem like the lofty Barn of ſome rich Swain,
When from the Thatch drips faſt a Show'r of Rain.

In vain ſhe ſearch'd each Cranny of the Houſe,
Each gaping Chink impervious to a Mouſe.
Was it for this (ſhe cry'd) with daily Care,
'Within thy Reach I ſet the Vinegar?
'And fill'd the Cruet with the acide Tide,
'While Pepper-Water Worms thy Bait ſupply'd;
'Where twin'd the Silver Eel around thy Hook,
'And all the little Monſters of the Brook.
'Sure in that Lake he dropt: My *Grilly*'s drown'd.
She *dragg'd* the Cruet, but no *Grildrig* found.

'Vain is thy Courage, *Grilly*, vain thy Boaſt:
'But little Creatures enterprize the moſt.
'Trembling, I've ſeen thee dare the Kitten's Paw;
'Nay mix with Children, as they play'd at Taw;
'Nor fear the Marbles, as they bounding flew:
'Marbles to them, but rolling Rocks to you.

'Why did I truſt thee with that giddy Youth?
'Who from a *Page* can never learn the Truth?
'Vers'd in Court-Tricks, that Money-loving Boy,
'To ſome Lord's Daughter ſold the living Toy;
'Or rent him Limb from Limb in cruel Play,
'As Children tear the Wings of Flies away.

'From

'FROM Place to Place o'er *Brobdingnag* I'll
'roam,
'And never will return, or bring thee home.
'But who hath Eyes to trace the paſſing Wind?
'How then, thy fairy Footſteps can I find?
'Doſt thou bewilder'd wander all alone,
'In the green Thicket of a moſſy Stone,
'Or tumbled from the Toadſtool's ſlipp'ry Round,
'Perhaps all maim'd, lie grov'ling on the Ground?
'Doſt thou, imboſom'd in the lovely Roſe,
'Or ſunk within the Peach's Down, repoſe?
'Within the King-Cup if thy Limbs are ſpread,
'Or in the golden Cowſlip's Velvet Head,
'O ſhew me, *Flora!* 'midſt thoſe Sweets, the
'Flow'r,
'Where ſleeps my *Grildrig* in his fragrant Bow'r!

'BUT ah! I fear thy little Fancy roves
'On little Females, and on little Loves;
'Thy pigmy Children, and thy tiny Spouſe,
'The Baby Play-Things that adorn thy Houſe,
'Doors, Windows, Chimneys, and the ſpacious
'Rooms,
'Equal in Size, to Cells of Honeycombs.
'Haſt thou for theſe now ventur'd from the Shore,
'Thy Bark a Bean-Shell, and a Straw thy Oar?
'Or in thy Box, now bounding on the Main?
'Shall I ne'er bear thy ſelf and Houſe again?
'And ſhall I ſet thee on my Hand no more,
'To ſee thee leap the Lines, and traverſe o'er
'My

Digitized by Google

'My ſpacious Palm? Of Stature ſcarce a Span,
'Mimick the Actions of a real Man?
'No more behold thee turn my Watches Key,
'As Seamen at a Capſtern Anchors weigh?
'How wert thou wont to walk with cautious
'Tread,
'A Diſh of Tea like Milk-Pail on thy Head?
'How chaſe the Mite that bore thy Cheeſe away,
'And keep the rolling Maggot at a Bay?

She ſaid; but broken Accents ſtopt her Voice,
Soft as the Speaking-Trumpet's mellow Noiſe:
She ſobb'd a Storm, and wip'd her flowing Eyes,
Which ſeem'd like two broad Suns in miſty Skies:
O! ſquander not thy Grief; thoſe Tears command,
To weep upon our Cod in *Newfoundland*:
The plenteous Pickle ſhall preſerve the Fiſh,
And *Europe* taſte thy Sorrows in her Diſh.

Digitized by Google

MARY GULLIVER

TO

Capt. *LEMUEL GULLIVER.*

ARGUMENT.

The Captain, ſome Time after his Return, being retired to Mr. SYMPSON's *in the Country, Mrs.* GULLIVER, *apprehending from his late Behaviour, ſome Eſtrangement of his Affections, writes him the following expoſtulating, ſoothing, and tenderly-complaining* Epiſtle.

WELCOME, thrice welcome, to thy native Place!
—— What, touch me not? What, ſhun a Wife's Embrace?

Have

Digitized by Google

Have I for this thy tedious Abſence born,
And wak'd, and wiſh'd whole Nights for thy Return?
In five long Years I took no ſecond Spouſe;
What *Redriff* Wife ſo long hath kept her Vows?
Your Eyes, your Noſe, Inconſtancy betray;
Your Noſe you ſtop, your Eyes you turn away.
'Tis ſaid, that thou ſhouldſt *cleave unto thy Wife*;
Once *thou* didſt cleave, and *I* could cleave for Life.
Hear, and relent! Hark, how thy Children moan;
Be kind at leaſt to theſe, they are thy own;
Be bold, and count them all; ſecure to find
The honeſt Number that you left behind.
See how they pat thee with their pretty Paws:
Why ſtart you? Are they Snakes? Or have they Claws?
Thy Chriſtian Seed, our mutual Fleſh and Bone:
Be kind at leaſt to theſe, they are thy own.

* *BIDDEL*, like thee, might fartheſt *India* rove;
He chang'd his Country, but retain'd his Love.
There's Captain *Pannel*, abſent half his Life,
Comes back, and is the kinder to his Wife:
Yet *Pannel*'s Wife is brown, compar'd to me,
And Miſtreſs *Biddel* ſure is Fifty-three.

---

* Names of Sea Captains mentioned in *Gulliver*'s Travels.

Digitized by Google

Not touch me! Never Neighbour call'd me Slut;
Was *Flimnap*'s Dame more ſweet in *Lilliput?*
I've no red Hair to breathe an odious Fume;
At leaſt thy Conſort's cleaner than thy *Groom.*
Why then that dirty Stable Boy thy Care?
What mean thoſe Viſits to the *Sorrel Mare?*
Say, by what Witchcraft, or what Dæmon led,
Preferr'ſt thou *Litter* to the Marriage Bed?

Some ſay the Dev'l himſelf is in that *Mare:*
If ſo, our *Dean* ſhall drive him forth by Prayer.
Some think you mad, ſome think you are poſſeſt,
That *Bedlam* and clean Straw would ſuit you beſt:
Vain Means, alas, this Frenzy to appeaſe!
That *Straw*, that *Straw* would heighten the Diſeaſe.

My Bed (the Scene of all our former Joys,
Witneſs two lovely Girls, two lovely Boys)
Alone I preſs; in Dreams I call my Dear,
I ſtretch my Hand, no *Gulliver* is there!
I wake, I riſe, and ſhiv'ring with the Froſt,
Search all the Houſe; my *Gulliver* is loſt!
Forth in the Street I ruſh with frantick Cries;
The Windows open; all the Neighbours riſe:
Where ſleeps my Gulliver? *O tell me where!*
The Neighbours anſwer, '*With the Sorrel Mare.*

At early Morn, I to the Market haſte,
(Studious in ev'ry Thing to pleaſe thy Taſte;)

Digitized by Google

A curious *Fowl* and *'Sparagraſs* I choſe,
(For I remember'd you were fond of thoſe,)
Three Shillings coſt the firſt, the laſt ſev'n Groats;
Sullen you turn from both, and call for *Oats*.

Others bring Goods and Treaſure to their Houſes,
Something to deck their pretty Babes and Spouſes?
My *only* Token was a Cup like Horn,
That's made of nothing but a Lady's *Corn*.
'Tis not for that I grieve; no, 'tis to ſee
The *Groom* and *Sorrel Mare* preferr'd to me!

Theſe, for ſome Moments when you deign to quit,
And (at due Diſtance) ſweet Diſcourſe admit,
'Tis all my Pleaſure thy paſt Toil to know,
For pleas'd Remembrance builds Delight on Woe.
At every Danger pants thy Comfort's Breaſt,
And gaping Infants ſquawl to hear the reſt.
How did I tremble, when by thouſands bound,
I ſaw thee ſtretch'd on *Lilliputian* Ground;
When ſcaling Armies climb'd up ev'ry Part;
Each Step they trod, I felt upon my Heart.
But when thy Torrent quench'd the dreadful Blaze,
King, Queen, and Nation, ſtaring with Amaze,
Full in my View how all my Huſband came,
And what extinguiſh'd theirs, encreas'd my Flame.
Thoſe *Spectacles*, ordain'd thine Eyes to ſave,
Were once my Preſent; *Love* that Armour gave.

How

Digitized by Google

How did I mourn at *Bolgolam*'s Decree!
For when he ſign'd thy Death, he ſentenc'd me.

When Folks might ſee thee all the Country round
For Six-pence, I'd have given a thouſand Pound.
Lord! When the *Giant-Babe* that Head of thine
Got in his Mouth, my Heart was up in mine!
When in the *Marrow Bone* I ſee thee ramm'd,
Or on the Houſe-top by the Monkey cramm'd;
The piteous Images renew my Pain,
And all thy Dangers I weep o'er again.
But on the *Maiden's Nipple* when you rid,
Pray Heav'n, 'twas all a wanton Maiden did!
Glumdalclitch too!--with thee I mourn her Caſe,
Heav'n guard the gentle Girl from all Diſgrace!
O may the King that one Neglect forgive,
And pardon her the Fault by which I live!
Was there no other Way to ſet him free?
My Life, alas! I fear prov'd Death to thee.

O teach me, Dear, new Words to ſpeak my Flame!
Teach me to wooe thee by thy beſt-lov'd Name!
Whether the Style of *Grildrig* pleaſe thee moſt,
So call'd on *Brobdingnag*'s ſtupendous Coaſt,
When on the Monarch's ample Hand you ſate,
And halloo'd in his Ears Intrigues of State:
Or *Quinbus Fleſtrin* more Endearment brings,
When like a Mountain you look'd down on Kings:

If

If Ducal *Nardac*, *Lilliputian* Peer,
Or *Glumglum*'s humbler Title ſooth thy Ear;
Nay, would kind *Jove* my Organs ſo diſpoſe,
To hymn harmonious *Houyhnhnms* thro' the Noſe,
I'd call thee *Houyhnhnm*, that high ſounding Name,
Thy Children's Noſes all ſhould twang the ſame.
So might I find my loving Spouſe of Courſe
Endu'd with all the *Virtues of a Horſe*.

The End of the third Volume.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MAR 1 7 1958

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google